RICHES

RICHES

Information
which will enable
every person to
realize in fullness
the greatest desire
and fondest hopes
of humankind.

By J. F. Rutherford

Author of

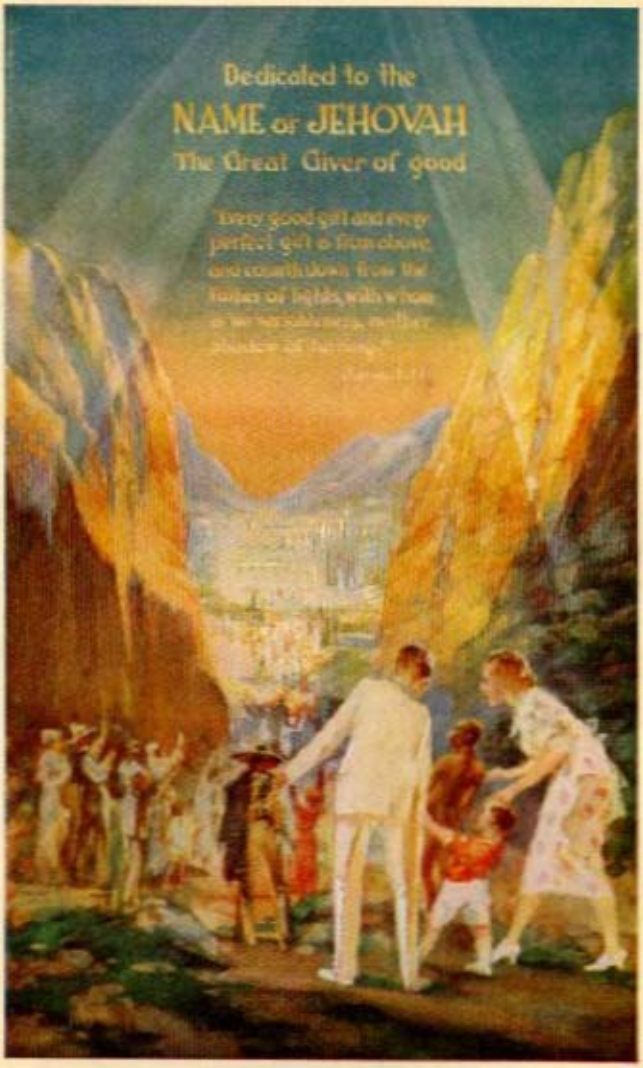
RECONCILIATION GOVERNMENT
DELIVERANCE CREATION
PROPHECY LIGHT
and other books

First printing
1,000,000 copies

Publishers
WATCH TOWER
BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY
International Bible Students Association
Brooklyn, N. Y., U. S. A.

Also
London, Toronto, Strathfield, Cape Town,
Berne, Copenhagen, and in other countries.

Copyrighted 1936 by J. F. Rutherford
Made in the United States of America


Dedicated to the
NAME OF JEHOVAH
The Great Giver of good

[B L A N K]

RICHES

[B L A N K]

RICHES

CHAPTER I

FALSE AND TRUE

DO YOU SINCERELY desire to be rich and very happy? If so, a knowledge of how to gain riches and how to enjoy the same is of the greatest importance to you. If you are kept in ignorance of the true way and permit yourself to rely upon and be guided by the opinion of imperfect man, you can never gain the riches that will bring you peace and lasting happiness. Every person who will learn the right way, and who will then continue diligently to follow that right way, is absolutely certain in time to possess great riches and all attending blessings. The right way is not to be found in human schemes. He who would be truly rich must earnestly seek to gain a knowledge of JEHOVAH GOD and his great treasure house.

Are you willing to devote the necessary time and give sincere consideration to the study of what is written in this book? If so, you will gain a knowledge that will bring to you real peace of mind, because this book does not contain the opinion of a man, but sets forth the truth taken from the Word of God. It will satisfy those who carefully consider it. Millions of honest persons have been turned away from Jehovah God, and from the Bible, because of the misrepresentation both of God and of the Bible. Millions of others have been kept in ignorance of the Bible because self-

ish men have informed the people that they cannot understand the Bible. The truth is that the 'Scripture given by inspiration of God' is for the very purpose of instructing honest and fearless persons in the right way to go. (2 Timothy 3:16, 17) The inspired Scriptures make the clear distinction between false and true riches and make plain the reason why happiness is gained and fully enjoyed only by those who find true riches. Before you can intelligently choose the false or the true way of becoming rich you must learn of both ways; then, being free to choose, you will choose one or the other. If you rely upon the opinion or word of any man, you are certain to go in the wrong way. "Put not your trust in princes, nor in the son of man, in whom there is no help." (Psalm 146:3) If you trust in and rely upon the Word of God, you are certain to go in the right way. "Trust in the Lord with all thine heart; and lean not unto thine own understanding. In all thy ways acknowledge him, and he shall direct thy paths." (Proverbs 3:5, 6) The greatest crisis of all time is now upon the human race, and every honest person will now have the opportunity to learn the right way to go in order that each one may freely choose his own destiny. Your opportunity is now at hand.

False riches, consisting of money, houses and lands, acquired by selfish means at cost to others and thereafter used selfishly, are almost always used for the oppression of other persons. In this present time a few men own or possess almost all the money, houses and lands, and the great mass of humankind suffer in need of the very necessities for their daily living. Riches thus selfishly acquired and wrongfully used

the Scriptures describe as "filthy lucre". Selfish men love the power that a great amount of money gives them, and for that reason it is written in the Scriptures that "the love of money is the root of all evil". (1 Timothy 6:10) The evil is not in the money, but money results in evil because of the love of gain and power that money brings to the one that possesses and wrongfully uses it. If one honestly obtains money and properly uses it in a righteous cause to the glory of God, that money does not result in evil, but in good.

The few men who possess the wealth of the material things of the earth at the present time are not truly happy. In almost all cases such men are proud, haughty, severe, unkind and extremely selfish. While possessing much more than they need, they are always fearful of losing what they possess. The money of the ultrarich is often used to oppress others, and men who thus use it appear to be proud that they have such power. Concerning them God says: "Therefore pride compasseth them about as a chain; violence covereth them as a garment. Their eyes stand out with fatness; they have more than heart could wish. They are corrupt, and speak wickedly concerning oppression: they speak loftily. They set their mouth against the heavens; and their tongue walketh through the earth. And they say, How doth God know? and is there knowledge in the Most High? Behold, these are the ungodly, who prosper in the world; they increase in riches."—Psalm 73:6-9, 11, 12.

Now perilous times have come, exactly as God's Word foretold they would come, and this is due to the fact that we are in the "last days", when men have become agreement-breakers and unfaithful and

seek to exalt themselves at the expense of both the rich and the poor. (2 Timothy 3:1-4) Selfish political rulers, desiring to keep themselves in power, and overreached by other wrongful influence, proceed to "soak the rich" in order to create more political jobs and thus increase their opportunities of keeping themselves in office. Men who are thus endeavoring to wrongfully take away from the earthly rich that which they possess are both unhappy and extremely selfish. Those who possess much material riches now, and the others who are trying to grab the same, are both moved by a selfish desire; and pursuing that course, they are certain to be sorely disappointed within a very short time. "Trust not in oppression, and become not vain in robbery; if riches increase, set not your heart upon them." (Psalm 62:10) "He that trusteth in his [material] riches shall fall." (Proverbs 11:28) "As the partridge sitteth on eggs, and hatcheth them not; so he that getteth riches, and not by right, shall leave them in the midst of his days, and at his end shall be a fool."—Jeremiah 17:11.

Such a person becomes a fool for the reason he makes selfish gain, otherwise called "money", his god and relies on the power and protection that his money might bring to him. He disregards God and true wisdom and by his course of action proves that he is a fool; as the Scriptures declare: "The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God." (Psalm 14:1) By pursuing such a course of action he discloses his motive, which is here represented by "his heart", and in harmony with this he in effect says that he is a fool. By disregarding God's provision made for man, and by pursuing a selfish course, man becomes en-

tirely blind to his best interests. The multitudes of people on earth have gone practically crazy by reason of their insatiable desire to acquire material wealth. Such false riches endure but a short time. Man dies, and that is the end of his riches which he has acquired in the wrong way: "Riches profit not in the day of wrath; but righteousness delivereth from death." (Proverbs 11:4) "Wilt thou set thine eyes upon that which is not? for riches certainly make themselves wings; they fly away, as an eagle toward heaven." (Proverbs 23:5) These texts here quoted apply to what is termed "false riches".

"TRUE RICHES"

To understand the clear distinction between false and true riches is essential to your life and happiness. Only in the Bible is there to be found that clear distinction and contrast. Jehovah God is truly rich far beyond the imagination of humankind. The word "world" means that which is both in earth and in heaven, that is, both the things seen and the things unseen by human eyes. All things belong to Jehovah God: "The earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein." (Psalm 24:1) "In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth." (Genesis 1:1) "Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power; for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created." (Revelation 4:11) To learn of the true riches we must go to the fountainhead of such riches.

Christ Jesus is exceedingly rich. The name originally given him, as set forth in the Scriptures, is The

Word of God, that is, the Logos, or One whom Jehovah God uses to announce and to put into execution his commandments. The Word or Logos was the beginning of Jehovah's creation (Revelation 3:14), and thereafter Jehovah God employed the Logos (his Word) as his active agent in the creation of all things. "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was [a] God." (John 1:1) The literal translation, by the *Emphatic Diaglott* (interlinear reading), is: "In the beginning was the [Logos], and the [Logos] was with the God, and a god was the [Logos]." That means that Jehovah God is the great First Cause, without beginning and without end, and is therefore "the God"; and that the beginning of his creation was the Logos or Word, who is "a god", that is, a mighty one. When Jehovah God sent his Beloved One, the Word, to earth, he was given the name "Jesus". Jesus said: "My Father is greater than I." (John 14:28) Jehovah God is the Father; Christ Jesus, the Son. Jehovah "God [the Father] . . . created all things by Jesus Christ", his Son. (Ephesians 3:9) Concerning Christ Jesus, the Word, it is written: "For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers; all things were created by him, and for him: and he is before all things, and by him all things consist."—Colossians 1:16, 17.

All things that are done by Jehovah God are done in order and in full harmony with his universal organization. That organization of Jehovah consists of the Logos, cherubim, seraphim, angels, and others,

and over all is the great Almighty God. One of the names given to God's organization is "Zion", and that organization is symbolically represented or pictured by a woman, which "woman" gives birth to children. (Isaiah 54:1-13) Out of his universal organization Jehovah God takes certain ones that are in harmony with him and builds them up into his capital organization, of which capital organization Christ Jesus, the King of glory, is the Head. The capital organization of Jehovah He specifically uses to carry out his purposes. That organization is otherwise spoken of in the Scriptures as "the kingdom".

God created the first man, whom he called Adam. Then God created a woman, whom he named Eve; and this man and woman were given the power from Jehovah God to reproduce their kind, that is to say, to cause conception and birth of children. The first man and his wife were a part of Jehovah's universal organization; that is, they were in the earthly or visible part thereof under the supervision of an invisible overlord. They were in Eden, a place of perfection and beauty. To man God had announced his law, and man was told that the penalty for the violation of God's law is death. The manner in which man violated God's law would not be material. The crime consists in the violation in any manner; and the penalty, death. God did not require of man a great thing, but required of him the small thing of declining to partake of certain fruit. The man willfully violated God's law, and therefore was justly sentenced to death and was expelled from God's universal organization.

After a long period of time, during which time the organism of Adam was degenerating, the man died.

At and from the time of his creation man was rich until he became a sinner, and then he lost all things. (Genesis 3:17-24) The wrongful act of Adam in breaking God's law, together with the wrongful acts of other creatures involved in that wicked transaction, brought great reproach upon the holy name of Jehovah God. Would Jehovah God take the necessary action to clear and vindicate his holy name before all creatures of his universe? The answer to this question is found in the Scriptures, and now of this you shall learn.

HIS PURPOSE

The name "Almighty God" specifically applies to the Eternal One as the great First Cause, and the Creator of all things created. His name "Jehovah" particularly means his purpose toward his creatures. At the time of the disobedience and fall of Adam and his expulsion from the universal organization of God the great Creator there in cryptic language announced his purpose to bring into existence his capital organization, or kingdom, which in due time shall destroy all lawless ones and establish righteousness in the earth as in heaven, and that all this will be to the vindication of Jehovah's name. (Genesis 3:15; 12:2, 3; 22:16-18) "God is love" (1 John 4:16); which means that he is wholly unselfish and that all things are done by him unselfishly. The vindication of his name in the mind of creatures does not add anything to Jehovah. What creatures think of the Almighty Creator is of no profit to the Creator. God has announced his purpose to vindicate his name, and that vindication will afford his creatures full and complete oppor-

tunity to gain great riches at the hands of the Creator. God is not trying to save creatures, but he affords his creatures the opportunity to avail themselves of the salvation which he has provided. He is the source and fountain of all riches; and for man to have and to enjoy such riches man must know God and know of his provision to gain the desired and true riches. Jehovah makes it possible for all his intelligent creatures to receive riches at his bountiful hand.

Man was created for the earth and in order that he might have and enjoy the fullness of the riches of the earth. The perfect man in Eden therefore was rich, and such riches he might have possessed forever had he continued obedient to his Creator. By his disobedience of God's law, before man had exercised his power to bring children into the earth, not only Adam lost everything for himself, but his children were born as sinners, imperfect, and without the right to live. "Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned." (Romans 5:12) It is written plainly in the Scriptures that Jehovah God created man for the earth and the earth for man: "I have made the earth, and created man upon it: I, even my hands, have stretched out the heavens, and all their host have I commanded. For thus saith the Lord that created the heavens; God himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, he created it not in vain, he formed it to be inhabited; I am the Lord, and there is none else."—Isaiah 45:12, 18.

Shall the disobedience of man and the loss of the right to live, and the loss of the right to true riches,

defeat the purpose of Jehovah for which he created the earth? The purpose of Jehovah cannot fail, but must be accomplished; and concerning this it is written: "I have spoken it, I will also bring it to pass; I have purposed it, I will also do it." (Isaiah 46:11) "My word . . . shall not return unto me void; but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it." (Isaiah 55:11) Jehovah would not permit anything to prevent him from carrying out his purpose. God does not change, neither does his law change. (Malachi 3:6) He does not reverse his own judgment or sentence or determination. Seeing, then, that all men, by reason of Adam's sin, were born imperfect and without the right to live, how could it be possible for any man ever to gain the true riches at the hand of Jehovah God and to for ever thereafter enjoy the same?

REDEMPTION

By his own efforts man could never gain the true and desired riches. It is written: "For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, that ye through his poverty might be rich." (2 Corinthians 8:9) This scripture in a few words states how it is possible for a man to obtain true riches, which is the greatest desire of all sane creatures. Born in sin, and shapen in iniquity (Psalm 51:5), alienated from God and under the power of sin and absolutely certain of death, all human creatures come into the world in a state of abject poverty. A small percent of the human race, at a loss to their fellow creatures, become rich in the material things of the earth; but these entirely miss

the true riches, and their false riches thus obtained avail them nothing in the end. "They that trust in their wealth, and boast themselves in the multitude of their riches; none of them can by any means redeem his brother, nor give to God a ransom for him: that he should still live for ever, and not see corruption. For he seeth that wise men die, likewise the fool and the brutish person perish, and leave their wealth to others. Their inward thought is, that their houses shall continue for ever, and their dwellingplaces to all generations; they call their lands after their own names. Nevertheless, man being in honour abideth not; he is like the beasts that perish." (Psalm 49:6, 7, 9-12) Thus is stated the condition of the imperfect human race, entirely helpless and with no ability to gain that which is so greatly desired.

Although God could not set aside his judgment against man and the effect thereof upon the descendants of the first man, yet he provided in his law that he could consistently accept a substitute for the condemned race and thereby relieve man of the disability under which all find themselves. The unselfish provision made by Jehovah for man, therefore, was that a life might be given for a life, that is, a perfect sinless life be given as a substitute for the one who was once sinless and who became sinful and therefore subject to death. (Deuteronomy 19:21) The sinless life that is accepted in the place of the man Adam, who committed sin, must be a perfect human life. It could be nothing more, and certainly nothing less, in order to meet the requirements of God's law. All the human race being the offspring of Adam the sinner, it is entirely impossible for any of Adam's offspring

to become the ransomer or redeemer of his fellow mankind. "Ransom" means an exact corresponding price, that is, the price of exactly the same value as the law requires of the one who committed the sin.

It was the perfect man Adam that sinned, and God's law required the forfeit of Adam's life in death; and the judgment of God took away from Adam his right to live, and he died. Nothing could become a ransom for Adam save a perfect human creature, possessing human life and the right to that life. The one who becomes the redeemer or ransomer of Adam and his offspring must stand exactly in the position occupied by Adam prior to sinning and at the time he was perfect when in Eden, and before he had taken any wrongful steps whatever in the commission of sin. The one who would take the place of the sinful man and suffer death in order to provide redemption must be a perfect human creature. If he was part spirit and part human that would not be a price exactly corresponding to the perfect man Adam. In no creature was there the power to make this provision for redemption. Only God could provide such a ransomer or redeemer, and the Scriptures show that he has provided the redemption for man. In doing this Jehovah was moved entirely by unselfishness.

The Logos, the spirit creature, the Word of Jehovah God, was exceedingly rich, because he was next to Jehovah and the active agent of Jehovah in the creation of all things and consequently enjoyed the fullness of riches of all creation. In order for him to become the redeemer of man he must become a man, and hence he must lay aside all of that riches and glory which he possessed and enjoyed in heaven

and become just a man. In harmony with this it is expressly written that "Jesus . . . was made a little lower than the angels, for the suffering of death, . . . that he, by the grace of God, should taste death for every man". (Hebrews 2:9) This proves that Jesus on the earth was not part spirit nor wholly spirit creature, like the angels, but was made human and lower than the angels, and made thus in order that he might become the redeemer or ransomer of mankind by taking the place of man as a sinner and suffering death as a sinner. Laying aside his heavenly riches and glory, therefore, he became poor.

How was the Logos, now called "Jesus", made a man? His father or life-giver was not a human creature, the descendant of Adam. If the son of Adam, then he could not have been born a perfect man. The Scriptures point out that Joseph and Mary were espoused and before their marriage was consummated, that is, before there was intercourse by them, Mary "was found [to be] with child of the holy spirit". That means that the invisible power of Jehovah God, his spirit, had caused Mary to conceive in her womb a babe. Stated in other phrase, Jehovah God had exercised his power, and in the womb of Mary was a child before she was married to Joseph. The angel of God then transmitted to Joseph this message, to wit: "Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her is of the holy spirit. And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for it is he that shall save his people from their sins. Now all this is come to pass, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying,

Behold, the virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Immanuel; which is, being interpreted, God with us."—Matthew 1:20-23, *American Revised Version.*

In due time Mary gave birth to the child which she had conceived by reason of the miraculous power exercised by the great Creator. When the child was born God begat him, which means that He acknowledged the child as his Son and called his name Jesus, which means that he was born to be the Savior of the world. At the moment of the birth of Jesus a message of greatest importance to humankind was announced by God's angels, which were sent from heaven: "And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid. And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day, in the city of David, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. . . . Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men." —Luke 2:9-14.

Thus into the world came the perfect child named Jesus: "And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon him." (Luke 2:40) Under God's law a man was required to be thirty years of age in order to serve as a servant or priest in God's organization. Jesus grew to manhood's estate, and now he was ready and qualified to carry out the purpose of his Father, Jehovah God. He met John at the river Jordan, and there John, at the request of Jesus, baptized Jesus in the river. This was done as an outward testimony

that Jesus had agreed to do his Father's will, whatsoever that should be: "And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him: and, lo, a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased." (Matthew 3:16, 17) In this manner Jehovah acknowledged or begat Jesus Christ as his Beloved One sent to earth to accomplish his purpose. For three and one-half years thereafter the man Jesus was put to the most severe test, and under such test at all times proved his loyalty and faithfulness to God and maintained his integrity toward his Father.

Why was Jesus on earth? The primary reason, as given by the Scriptures, is that he was on earth to vindicate the name of Jehovah God; and the secondary reason was, to redeem the human race and thus afford an opportunity for man to live. The secondary reason is here first considered, and the primary reason is considered in a subsequent chapter herein.

The redemption of man is so important, and a clear understanding thereof so necessary, that in order to make the matter as clear as possible some things heretofore stated are repeated. The imperfect man Adam, under the sentence of death, could not transmit to his offspring the right to live. Since all humankind are the offspring of Adam, all were brought into the world without the right to live. In a few words it is stated in the Scriptures, to wit: "Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned."—Romans 5:12.

All human creatures are by inheritance sinners, and for that reason are not directly responsible for their imperfection. They are born in sin and in lawlessness because of conditions over which the child has no control. "Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me." (Psalm 51:5) The removal of that disability from the human race could be accomplished only by the perfect man Jesus' dying as a sinner and in the place and stead of the sinner and to thereby provide the ransom or redemptive price for mankind. The man Jesus was a perfect man and in every way exactly corresponded to the perfect man Adam before he sinned. Jesus possessed life as a human creature, and also the right to life, because at all times obedient ones in harmony with God have the right from God to live. The perfect man Jesus possessed all the necessary qualifications to become the redeemer of the human race. The redemptive price must be provided first, and the vindication of Jehovah's name must follow thereafter.

God could not consistently compel a perfect man to die in the place of one who had sinned, but he could make it possible for a perfect man to willingly die in harmony with his Father's will. It was the will of God that men should have an opportunity to live, and the Lord Jesus was fully committed to do the will of God; hence he voluntarily submitted himself to the will of God in order that he might become the Redeemer. God's provision or law was stated in this manner: "For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life, through Jesus Christ our Lord." (Romans 6:23) That law of God means that he who willingly sins must die and that there

is no escape from death and no hope for subsequent life unless Jehovah makes it possible for man to live. Life is the gift from God, and he has made provision to give life to obedient men through Jesus Christ.

Life and the right to live only God can give, and for this reason it is written that 'life is the gift of God through Jesus Christ'. Before this gift is even offered, however, the disability of the one to whom the gift is made must be removed; and that disability could be removed only by the life of the perfect man Jesus given in sacrifice and applied as the ransom price for sinful man. For this reason Jesus said: "Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many." (Matthew 20:28) The coming of Jesus was not that he might receive something for himself, but that he might minister unto others and that he might give his life as a means of salvation for as many of mankind as would comply with the requirements of God's law after having received a knowledge thereof.

POOR

The perfect man Jesus must die, not because of wrongdoing on his part nor by compulsion, but he must die voluntarily in obedience to the law of his Father. It was the delight of Jesus to do the will of his Father, and he so expressed it. (Psalm 40:8) That Jesus was not compelled to die, but did so willingly and in harmony with his Father's will, note his own words: "Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it again. No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power

to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father."—John 10:17, 18.

These words of Jesus clearly prove that Jesus was at unity or in full accord with his Father and whatsoever was the will of his Father that Jesus delighted to do. In heaven Jesus was very rich. Leaving the heavenly courts to become a human creature Jesus became poor, as compared with what he had as a spirit. As a man on earth Jesus was rich. He was the only man ever on earth, aside from Adam, who was perfect. One of the titles by which he was known, and is since known, is "The Son of the man" (*Greek MS*), meaning that because he was the only perfect man he became the rightful owner and possessor of everything that Adam once had and lost. Adam had become a pauper by reason of his sin, and now Jesus must become a pauper voluntarily in order to assume the place of the sinner Adam. To become the redeemer of sinful man Jesus necessarily must divest himself of every right and possession. In support of this conclusion it is written: "And Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head." (Luke 9:58) This does not mean that Jesus could find no place to rest his body, but does mean that, having come to take the place of sinful man, he must lay aside claim to everything. Therefore he gives the comparison between himself and the foxes and the birds. He must become entirely poor, divested of all riches.

And why did Jesus become poor? So far as the answer relates to man, he became poor, as stated by the Scriptures, "for your [man's] sakes . . . that ye through his poverty might be rich." (2 Corinthians

8:9) Otherwise stated, Jesus, by fully complying with the will of God, qualified to become the Savior of humankind and God's instrument by and through which life can be given to the obedient ones of humankind. For this reason Jesus said: "I am come that they might have life."—John 10:10.

Aside from the provision Jehovah made, and the redemptive work performed by Christ Jesus, there is no possibility for any human creature to ever have life: "Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved." (Acts 4:12) Only those who have full faith and confidence in the shed blood of Jesus as the redemptive price for man can obtain life everlasting. For the obedient ones God has provided the means of granting life and forever sustaining that life. This provision God had foreshadowed by his dealing with the children of Israel through the hand of Moses. The Israelites in the desert were in great need of food, and God sent them food at the hand of Moses, whom he had appointed to lead them. Bearing upon this point of God's provision for man to live, the Jews said to Jesus: "Our fathers did eat manna in the desert; as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat. Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven. For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world. Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread. And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life; he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall

never thirst. For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day."—John 6:31-35, 38, 40.

Bread is food used to sustain the human organism, and here Jesus used bread as a symbol to picture himself whom God has provided as the Giver and Sustainer of life. "Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life. I am that bread of life. Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead. This is the bread which cometh down from heaven that a man may eat thereof, and not die." (John 6:47-50) These words of Jesus were spoken with absolute authority from Jehovah God.

That the death of Jesus results beneficially only to those who believe and obey the Lord is further supported by the words of Jesus, spoken with authority from on high, to wit: "I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me should not abide in darkness. He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day. For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. And I know that his commandment is life everlasting; whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak." (John 12:46, 48-50) God does not compel anyone to avail himself of the benefit of the ransom sacrifice. Life is "the gift of

God", and a gift is received only by the one who first learns about it and then accepts it.

The death of the perfect man Jesus would, in any manner inflicted, meet the requirements of the law, because death was the penalty inflicted upon Adam. Why, then, was Jesus crucified? Jesus was crucified, not on a cross of wood, such as is exhibited in many images and pictures, and which images are made and exhibited by men; Jesus was crucified by nailing his body to a tree. His being put to death in this manner symbolically said: "This man is cursed of God." Dying as a sinner was an ignominious death, and being crucified upon a tree in effect said: "The one here dying is put to death as a vile sinner." Such was a provision that God had made in his law. (Deuteronomy 21:22, 23) The curse of God was upon Adam because of Adam's willful sin. To become the ransomer or redeemer Jesus must die as though he were accursed of God, a vile sinner, yet without sin in fact; and for this reason Jehovah suffered his Beloved Son to be put to death by nailing him to a tree. "Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us; for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree." (Galatians 3:13) "The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree."—Acts 5:30.

The crucifixion of Jesus upon a tree is a testimony to all creation that he willingly suffered the most ignominious death in order that he might prove himself entirely obedient to the will of God under the most adverse conditions and thereby meet all the requirements of God's law as pertains to a sinful man.

It was the man Jesus who became poor as a man

and died in ignominy. It was Christ Jesus whom Jehovah God raised out of death, a creature divine, and who is "alive for evermore" and to whom Jehovah has committed boundless riches. In support of this conclusion, note the divine record: "Who, though being in God's form, yet did not meditate a usurpation to be like God, but divested himself, taking a bondman's form, having been made in the likeness of men; and being in condition as a man, he humbled himself, becoming obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. And therefore God supremely exalted him, and freely granted to him that name which is above every name; in order that in the name of Jesus every knee should bend, of those in heaven, and of those on earth, and of those beneath; and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, for the glory of God the Father." —Philippians 2:6-11, *Diaglott.*

Jehovah God has placed Christ Jesus in the most exalted place in all of His universe, next to the Most High God. Christ Jesus is given all the riches of the universe and made the chief officer of Jehovah, the Vindicator of Jehovah's name, and the One who speaks with absolute authority. That Christ Jesus is the active agent of Jehovah in the creation of all things, and that since his resurrection he is the heir of all things and speaks with absolute authority, note the following: "God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his

power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they. For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son? And again, when he bringeth in the firstbegotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him."—Hebrews 1:1-6.

Christ Jesus is made the King of the world, therefore its rightful Ruler, and in his name alone the people who would receive the blessings of Jehovah must trust, and they must completely rely upon him. "But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom. Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore GOD, even thy GOD, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows. And, Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of thine hands." (Hebrews 1:8-10) Christ Jesus is made the Author of eternal salvation to all who believe in the value of his shed blood, and who render themselves in full obedience to him as God's great administrator of blessings to the human race: "And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him; called of God an high priest after the order of Melchisedec." —Hebrews 5:9, 10.

The ransom sacrifice provided does not mean the salvation of every man that has ever lived on earth, but means an opportunity for salvation and riches

to be had and enjoyed by those who believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and who then render themselves in full obedience to God's law. The so-called "doctrine of universal salvation" is entirely wrong and completely out of harmony with the Word of God. It is equally erroneous to say that God tries to save anyone. It is not only wrong but a blasphemous doctrine to say that any man has power to "save souls", such as is claimed by men. Salvation proceeds from Jehovah God through Christ Jesus to those (and those only) who comply with God's provision for salvation.

KNOWLEDGE

One who has a clear perception of the truth possesses knowledge. To "know" means to perceive, comprehend and clearly understand what is truth. Without the truth no one can properly be informed. He who speaks with complete authority says concerning Jehovah's Word: "Thy word is truth"; meaning that Jehovah's purpose, as recorded in his book the Bible, is the truth. (John 17:17) It is by receiving a knowledge of the truth and by full obedience thereto that men may be qualified to be used in the service of the Most High God and to receive at his hands the great riches that come from his boundless treasure house.

Men have formed organizations and caused such organizations to promulgate dogmatic statements, teachings or doctrines, which are held up as a guide to the people, and by which millions of persons have been deceived. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy is made up of a few men, who assume authority to rule and govern, and that Hierarchy rules and controls mil-

lions of persons who are submissive to the Hierarchy. Such persons are not counted as members of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy or of "the church", but are designated by that organization as "the Catholic population"; meaning that they are the ones who bear up, support and furnish the money for such organization. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy has put before the people certain dogmatic statements or doctrines and told the people that they must follow the same, and millions of good persons have been induced to follow and obey the Hierarchy and by these doctrines have been greatly deceived. They are deceived because such dogmatic statements or doctrines put forth by the Hierarchy are not in harmony with God's truth.

The Roman Catholic Hierarchy has been diligent to keep from the people the Bible in order that the people might be kept in subjection to the Hierarchy; and, being in subjection to the Hierarchy, those millions of honest persons are not free, but are in bondage to a man-made organization. They can never be free until they break away and cease to follow the doctrines of men, and receive and follow the truth as set forth in the Word of God. To such persons in bondage and who are honest the words of Jesus apply, to wit: "If ye continue in my word, . . . ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. . . . If the Son [Christ Jesus] therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed." (John 8: 31-36) True knowledge, therefore, means to know the truth as spoken by Jesus and as set forth in the Scriptures.

The value of the truth to man cannot be overstated. The Scripture texts which follow should be carefully

considered by all who desire to share in the riches which God has provided for obedient man: "The fear of the Lord is the beginning of knowledge: but fools despise wisdom and instruction." (Proverbs 1:7) "Yea, if thou criest after knowledge, and liftest up thy voice for understanding; if thou seekest her as silver, and searchest for her as for hid treasures; then shalt thou understand the fear of the Lord, and find the knowledge of God. For the Lord giveth wisdom: out of his mouth cometh knowledge and understanding. He layeth up sound wisdom for the righteous: he is a buckler to them that walk uprightly. He keepeth the paths of judgment, and preserveth the way of his saints. Then shalt thou understand righteousness, and judgment, and equity; yea, every good path. When wisdom entereth into thine heart, and knowledge is pleasant unto thy soul, discretion shall preserve thee, understanding shall keep thee: to deliver thee from the way of the evil man, from the man that speaketh froward things."—Proverbs 2:3-12.

"Receive my instruction, and not silver; and knowledge rather than choice gold. For wisdom is better than rubies; and all the things that may be desired are not to be compared to it."—Proverbs 8:10, 11.

'The wise lay up knowledge.' (Proverbs 10:14) It is only the wise that will ever receive and enjoy the true riches which God has provided for obedient men. "And by knowledge shall the chambers be filled with all precious and pleasant riches. A wise man is strong; yea, a man of knowledge increaseth strength." —Proverbs 24:4, 5.

The "wise man", within the meaning of the Scriptures, is he who gains a knowledge of God's truth

and then diligently follows and obeys the same. He is the man that gets wisdom: "Happy is the man that findeth wisdom, and the man that getteth understanding. For the merchandise of it is better than the merchandise of silver, and the gain thereof than fine gold. She is more precious than rubies; and all the things thou canst desire are not to be compared unto her."—Proverbs 3:13-15.

Material riches honestly obtained and possessed and used in a proper way result in good, but such is not to be compared with a knowledge of the truth: "How much better is it to get wisdom than gold! and to get understanding rather to be chosen than silver!" (Proverbs 16:16) "The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom; and the knowledge of the holy is understanding."—Proverbs 9:10.

The fear of the Lord, as mentioned in the Scriptures, does not mean a morbid dread, but means to fear to do that which is contrary to the Word of God and to thereby displease Jehovah: "The fear of the Lord is to hate evil: pride, and arrogancy, and the evil way, and the froward mouth, do I hate."—Proverbs 8:13.

This text means to hate (and hence to refrain from doing) anything that works injury to another; to avoid pride and arrogancy, because such are displeasing to God; and to hate and hence to avoid the way of any who substitute the theories of men for God's Word of truth and who thereby mislead others. It means to refrain from and to hate anything that is fraudulent. The one who will please God must pursue the course as instructed by the Lord, to wit: 'Do good unto all men as you have opportunity,' and let

the Lord do the judging. (Galatians 6:10; Romans 14:4) As you gain a knowledge of the truth be diligent to pursue the truth and to present the truth to others as you have an opportunity and to thereby do good to them and show an appreciation of God's goodness toward you. A knowledge of God's truth must be had before one could possibly receive the riches of God's gift. It therefore follows that any man, men or organization that has kept you in ignorance of the Bible, and induced you to refrain from reading books that explain the Bible, has been instrumental in keeping you in ignorance of God's means of bestowing his blessings upon you. The Scriptures were written that man might have an opportunity to know the truth, and no man or company of men has the right to make merchandise of the people by assuming to teach them errors in the name of the Lord.

HIS BLESSING

Because Jehovah God is love, and therefore entirely unselfish, he has made provision for the salvation and blessing of man: "For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life." (John 3:16) Moved by unselfishness Jehovah God, at great cost to himself by the giving of his Beloved Son, has opened the way for human creatures to live, to become the recipients of the riches of his blessing, and to demonstrate their integrity toward him. The material riches which men of the world gain are always accompanied sooner or later with much sorrow. The blessings which Jehovah God bestows bring exactly the opposite result: "The bless-

ing of the Lord, it maketh rich; and he addeth no sorrow with it." (Proverbs 10:22) Without exception, God's blessing bestowed upon man is accompanied with peace and joy.

For the assurance and benefit of those who are diligently seeking knowledge and understanding of God's Word, it is written: "The law of the Lord is perfect, converting the soul; the testimony of the Lord is sure, making wise the simple. The statutes of the Lord are right, rejoicing the heart; the commandment of the Lord is pure, enlightening the eyes: the fear of the Lord is clean, enduring for ever; the judgments of the Lord are true and righteous altogether. More to be desired are they than gold, yea, than much fine gold; sweeter also than honey and the honeycomb. Moreover, by them is thy servant warned; and in keeping of them there is great reward."—Psalm 19:7-11.

The man who follows the law of God will never be brought into sorrow. It is only when he departs from the law of God that sorrow comes upon him. Knowledge and understanding of God's law, and obedience thereto, are to be desired above everything else.

True riches proceed from Jehovah God and are administered by Christ Jesus to the faithful obedient creature. To the man who gains knowledge, and walks in the way of the Lord, these precious promises are given: "Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful: but his delight is in the law of the Lord; and in his law doth he meditate day and night. And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth

forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper." (Psalm 1:1-3) The apostle and faithful servant of Jesus Christ, having shared in some of the riches of Jehovah's great treasure house, says to his fellow creatures who seek to walk in the right way: "[I] cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers; that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him; the eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints, and what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power."—Ephesians 1:16-19.

HEAVENLY RICHES

The world is composed of heaven and earth. "Heaven" has reference to the things not seen with the natural eye. "Earth" means those things that can be seen by the eye of natural man. For many years the peoples of this earth have been ruled by an unseen power which is very wicked, and an organization of men on earth under the dominating control of that great wicked one. God has declared his purpose to establish a righteous world that shall govern the people in righteousness: "And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed my voice." (Genesis 22:18; Isaiah 32:1) Jehovah God is certain to carry out his announced purpose. Based upon God's sure and unfailing promise, the faithful and inspired apostle

wrote: "Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness." (2 Peter 3:13) It is concerning this new heaven and new earth that you are now seeking information. The new heaven and new earth constitute the world of righteousness. That new heaven is God's capital organization, of which Christ Jesus is the Head, and which organization possesses riches beyond the description that could be given in human words. Together with Christ Jesus, the Head, that organization is composed of 144,000 associate members with Christ Jesus who share with him in his riches and glory, and is supported and accompanied by a host of holy angels attending upon the Lord Jesus.

The 144,000 associate members of that capital organization are taken from amongst men. (Revelation 7:4; 14:1-4) These men are first given a knowledge of the truth, separated from those of the world, put through a test, tried, and approved by Jehovah God, and all this work is done by Christ Jesus, the great High Priest of Jehovah. Christ Jesus was himself first chosen, tried and fully proved, and, showing his faithfulness in maintaining his integrity, he was then exalted to the highest position in Jehovah's universe. After his resurrection and ascension on high Christ Jesus begins the selection of the associate members that shall be in his organization, and this continues until it is accomplished at the end of the world. That holy and royal organization of Jehovah will always be invisible to human eyes, because Christ Jesus is spirit and the members of his royal house are spirit creatures, and no human eye can see a spirit crea-

ture. This royal house constitutes the new heavens, of which the apostle speaks.

Since the 144,000 associate members in the royal house of Jehovah are selected from amongst men, how is it possible for any man to become a spirit creature and thereafter be invisible to human eyes? It is certain that no man could of himself attain to that exalted state, but it is only by the grace and power of God that such can be accomplished. The way was made open by the full obedience of Christ Jesus that God might take out from the world and exalt men to be associates with Christ Jesus.

SIN-OFFERING

Because of sin, that is to say, the willful breaking or transgression of God's law, Adam was sentenced to death. Christ Jesus, the Redeemer of man, died on the earth; but in order that the judicial record of Jehovah against man, which record is kept in heaven, might be cleared, it was necessary for the value of the human life of Jesus that was sacrificed to be presented in heaven as an offering for the sin of man. The perfect man Jesus, being dead, could not present the value of his human life as a sin-offering. The perfect life of the man Jesus was not forfeited as was Adam's life. Jesus died; but, he being holy, harmless, without sin, the right to his human life still persists. (Hebrews 7:26) God raised up Jesus out of death, not as a man, but as a spirit creature divine and immortal, never again subject to death. (1 Peter 3:18, *A.R.V.;* Revelation 1:18) It is the divine Christ Jesus who presented the value of his human sacrifice before the throne of judgment or mercy seat in heav-

en as a sin-offering in behalf of sinful man, and to satisfy the divine record against man. The ceremony of presenting that life of Christ Jesus as an offering for sin was introduced in type at the tabernacle in the wilderness, which God caused Moses to build, and that ceremony foreshadowed Christ Jesus presenting in heaven the value of his perfect human life as an offering for sin.

In the tabernacle ceremony the bullock was slain in the court, which surrounded the tabernacle and which court pictured the earth, where Jesus died. Then the blood of the slain bullock was carried by the priest into the Most Holy in the tabernacle, and there sprinkled upon the mercy seat, and this pictured Christ Jesus, the great High Priest, appearing in heaven and presenting the value of his sacrifice there in behalf of man. (Leviticus 16:6, 11-14) The tabernacle service here mentioned was performed once each year. The slain bullock pictured the perfect man Jesus. The blood carried into the Most Holy, and sprinkled upon the mercy seat, pictured the lifeblood or value of the perfect human life of Jesus presented in heaven itself as an offering for sin.

Concerning this matter it is written: "And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission. It was therefore necessary that the patterns of things in the heavens should be purified with these; but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices than these. For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us. Nor yet that he should offer himself of-

ten, as the high priest entereth into the holy place every year with blood of others; for then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once [and not daily, as when the Catholic priest celebrates mass] in the end of the world hath he appeared, to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself." (Hebrews 9:22-26) The shed blood of Christ Jesus presented in heaven is the basis for justification of man and the bringing back of men into harmony with God who believe and obey what is taught in the Word of God.

It is true that Christ Jesus selected his apostles before he was put to death and eleven of those apostles proved faithful unto God and the Lord Jesus Christ. Their justification, however, could not take place until the value of the sacrifice of Jesus had been presented in heaven. Those faithful apostles, having been faithful to God and Jesus, were justified at Pentecost, and that was evidenced by the pouring out of the holy spirit upon them at that time. (Acts 2:1-16) From that time onward others were privileged to be selected from amongst men and placed in the heavenly organization of Jehovah under Christ Jesus as leader and head thereof.

Paul was selected by the Lord and afterwards made an ambassador of Christ Jesus, and Paul was given the power of inspiration from Jehovah to write authoritatively, and his inspired writings are made a part of the Word of God. He received his instruction from the risen Christ Jesus, and then he wrote these words, to wit: "For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; and that he was bur-

ied, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures; . . . And last of all he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time."—1 Corinthians 15:3-8.

Christ Jesus died as a sinner for the sin of man, and God raised him out of death for the justification of those men who believe on the Lord Jesus Christ. "Justification" means to be made right with God, that is to say, have a standing before Jehovah in righteousness resulting to the justified one, and which entitles the one justified to the right of life.—Romans 4:24, 25.

It is God who justifies or determines who is right with him. Before the man can be justified he must comply with God's fixed rules, the first of which is to receive some knowledge of Christ Jesus, and to believe upon him as the Savior of man. Says the Lord Jesus Christ: "I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no man cometh unto the Father, but by me." (John 14:6) "No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me."—John 6:44, 45.

Knowledge is therefore the first essential. Such knowledge Jehovah God makes possible to be had by those who diligently seek to know the right way. They learn that all men are born sinners and that Christ Jesus is the Redeemer of man; and having faith in the shed blood of Christ Jesus, they learn that he is the only way that leads to life. A man is thus drawn to Christ Jesus by the knowledge which Jehovah has

provided for him. He sees that God is the Giver of life, and that Christ Jesus is the Redeemer of man, and by and through Christ Jesus the gift of life is obtained.

FOR HIS NAME

The entire period of time from Pentecost until the second coming of Christ and his kingdom is occupied in the selection of those who will be associated with Christ Jesus in his kingdom. It is the 144,000 that are selected to be made members of the royal house. Are these selected merely to get them into heaven? No; they are taken out from amongst the peoples of the nations of earth to be witnesses among men to the name of Jehovah and his kingdom. Concerning this it is written: "God at the first did visit the [nations], to take out of them a people for his name." (Acts 15:14; *A.R.V.*, margin) While on the earth these selected ones must show forth the praises of Jehovah God and his King, and for that purpose they are called out of darkness and given the light of God's Word. (1 Peter 2:9) Many have been led to believe that God has caused the gospel to be preached merely to save men from eternal punishment and give them a home in heaven. That is not God's purpose, as his Word clearly shows. The company of persons so taken out from amongst the nations are the elect company of God, all of whom must be put to a certain test and must perform certain specific duties while on the earth; and the manner of their being taken out or selection, according to the Scriptures, is as follows:

When God draws one to Christ, as above stated, then that person must show his faith in God and in

Christ by making a consecration to do the will of God, if he would be pleasing to Jehovah. This he must do even as Christ Jesus covenanted to do the will of God. (See Psalm 40:7, 8.) The disciples of Jesus had been drawn to him, and Jesus was giving them instruction, which instruction likewise applies to all who are taken out of the world as a people for the name of Jehovah. "Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it; and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it. For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father, with his angels, and then he shall reward every man according to his works." —Matthew 16:24, 25, 27.

These words of Jesus show that the man who would become a true follower of Christ Jesus must deny himself, that is to say, voluntarily agree to put aside his own selfish will and gladly do the will of God. That is consecration. It was the will of God that Jesus should die a sacrificial death, and it is the will of God that those who are to be associated with Christ Jesus in his kingdom must die with Christ Jesus and be raised out of death as spirit creatures. This means that the man who would live with Christ Jesus must die as a man and from the time of his consecration until death such person must by his works prove his faithfulness to God and Christ, and those who do prove faithful Christ rewards at his second coming.

The person who exercises faith in God and in Christ Jesus by making an agreement to do the will of God is in line to be made right or given a standing before God, which is called "justification". The apostle un-

der inspiration wrote to his fellow followers of Christ Jesus to the effect that Abraham showed his full faith in God and because of his faith thus exercised God counted him a righteous man. Then the apostle adds: "Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him; but for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead; who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification." —Romans 4:20-25.

It is God who justifies or counts the man righteous who consecrates himself. (Romans 8:33) The one who is justified stands before God as though he were a righteous man, having all rights attaching to the one who is righteous: "Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ; by whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God." (Romans 5:1, 2) Justification results in the right of man to live as a human creature.

The man is justified in order to qualify him to become a follower of Christ Jesus, and such justification is an invitation to follow in the footsteps of the Lord: "For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps."—1 Peter 2:21.

It being the will of God that those who are thus justified and who are called shall die with Christ Jesus, the person who covenants to do the will of God must die as a human creature in order that he may be raised out of death a spirit creature. The justified one God accepts to be a sacrifice with Christ Jesus, and that means the right to live as a man or human

creature ceases and the privilege to live a spirit creature begins: "For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God. When Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory." (Colossians 3:3, 4) God acknowledges that one as his son, and this means that he begets that one as a son of God: "Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of firstfruits of his creatures." (James 1:18) "Begetting" means that God acknowledges or owns that person as his son called to the heavenly kingdom: "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, to an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you, who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation, ready to be revealed in the last time."—1 Peter 1:3-5.

The person thus begotten by the will of God is a new creature in Christ: "Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature; old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new." (2 Corinthians 5:17) Before that person all prospects are new because his hope now is to share in the heavenly riches with Christ Jesus, provided he continues faithful. From that time unto death he must prove his faithfulness under the severe test.

Concerning his purpose in coming to earth Jesus said: 'To this end came I into the world, that I should be a witness to the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my voice.' (John 18:37) As Jesus was faithful and true as a witness to the name of Jeho-

vah God, so likewise his faithful followers must be witnesses to the name of God. Because Jesus told the truth, he was greatly reproached and persecuted; and because his followers tell the truth, they must expect to be reproached and persecuted, as the Scriptures declare. (Romans 15:3; Psalm 69:9) Those persons thus taken out from among the nations as a people for Jehovah's name are separated from the world, and to them Christ Jesus says: "If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own; but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also. But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me." —John 15:18-21.

The reproaches and persecution that come upon the faithful followers of Christ Jesus are due to the fact that they bear testimony to the truth, and this affords them an opportunity to prove their faithfulness and to maintain their integrity toward God. Complete devotion to Jehovah and Christ Jesus, and faithfulness to the end, is required of all who start to follow in the footsteps of Jesus. To such Jesus says: "Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee the crown of life." (Revelation 2:10, *A.R.V.*) That does not mean a partial faithfulness or faithfulness for a specific time, but means to be faithful all the time unto God and unto Christ. Concerning such it is written:

"It is a faithful saying: For if we be dead with him, we shall also live with him: if we suffer, we shall also reign with him: if we deny him, he also will deny us."—2 Timothy 2:11, 12.

Paul the apostle was a faithful servant of and follower of Christ Jesus, and when he had reached the end of his earthly journey he wrote these words to his brethren: "For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand. I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith; henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing." (2 Timothy 4:6-8) In brief, such is the course a follower of Christ Jesus must pursue.

From the time of Pentecost to the second coming of Christ Jesus the calling and selection of the members of the royal house progressed. Within that time those who have died in faith and faithfulness have been dead and must await the coming of the Lord and the resurrection. Now the coming of the Lord is an accomplished fact, and those faithful ones, such as the apostle Paul, have been resurrected and have become a part of God's heavenly organization or royal house. Those who have been permitted to remain on the earth until now, and who are faithful unto God and Christ in the performance of their consecration, constitute the earthly or visible part of God's organization; and these continuing faithful unto death shall be instantly changed in the resurrection from human to spirit creatures, as it is written: "Behold, I shew you a mystery: We shall not all sleep, but we shall

all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump; for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory."—1 Corinthians 15:51-54.

While on the earth those who receive God's approval must be witnesses to the name and kingdom of Jehovah. In no other way can they be faithful and perform their commission. Such are the anointed ones and are commissioned to do that work, as it is written: "The spirit of the Lord God is upon me; because the Lord hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the broken-hearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; to proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; to appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the Lord, that he might be glorified." —Isaiah 61:1-3.

They must be obedient to the commandments of Jehovah, and which commandments are spoken by Christ Jesus; and any who fail or refuse to obey Christ Jesus, of whom Moses was a type, are certain to be destroyed. (Acts 3:22, 23) The end of the world

"AND THE SPIRIT AND THE BRIDE SAY, COME"
Page 51

[B L A N K]

has come, and concerning this time Jesus gave specific commandment that applies to all his true followers on earth, to wit: "And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations: and then shall the end come." (Matthew 24:14) This commandment must be obeyed, and for this reason the followers go forth as witnesses to the name of God and Christ Jesus. Because of their faithfulness in obedience to the commandments of the Lord they are hated by all who are against God and his kingdom.—Matthew 10:22.

In obedience to the Lord they must go from house to house delivering the testimony of the kingdom. (Luke 10:5) The apostles did that very thing. (Acts 20:20) Jehovah has bestowed upon these faithful ones his name, calling them by a "new name", to wit, "Jehovah's witnesses," and they must perform the duties enjoined upon them to testify to his name. (Isaiah 43:10-12; 62:1, 2) It is certain that they will be opposed by all those who are not for God, and they must "obey God rather than men". (Acts 5:29) They will obey the laws of the nations as long as those laws are not contrary to God's law; and this was what Jesus meant when he said: "Render therefore unto Cæsar the things which be Cæsar's, and unto God the things which be God's." (Luke 20:25) In performing their covenant these faithful ones necessarily suffer reproach and persecution, but such they must endure unto the end.—Matthew 10:22; 24:13.

Do those faithful ones have a promise of receiving riches? Yes; those faithful unto the end are certain to be sharers in great riches and share with Christ Jesus in his glory and power. Christ Jesus is the heir

of all the riches of God's boundless universe. (Hebrews 1:2) The faithful, who become members of his royal house, share with Christ Jesus in his glory and boundless riches, as it is written: "The spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: and if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together. For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us."—Romans 8:16-18.

During the period of approximately 1,900 years Jehovah has been calling, instructing and selecting those who make up his royal house, of which he, Christ Jesus, is the Head and Lord. Faithfulness is required of all who are thus brought into His royal family. Millions of persons have been led to believe that they are Christians, and claim to be followers of Christ, almost all of whom have never even learned what is required of a follower of Christ. The Scriptures definitely show that the number of the royal house is limited to 144,000. He is the Lord of lords and King of kings, and they that are with him are called, chosen and faithful. (Revelation 17:14; 7:4) To these the riches of God are given, not as an inducement to faithfulness, but such is God's provision for those who prove their faithfulness and maintain their integrity even unto death. Jehovah does not hire anyone to serve him. He does not induce anyone to serve him by reason of a reward. No creature could bring any profit to Jehovah God, regardless of what he might do. (Luke 17:10) Those who enter into a covenant to do the will of God and who are invited into the

covenant for the kingdom and who joyfully prove their faithfulness unto death are permitted to share the heavenly riches.

It is written that love is the principal thing, and love for God means that the creature is unselfishly and entirely devoted to God, regardless of what suffering his faithfulness may bring upon him. Having agreed to do God's will, he must do it. Complete faithfulness induced by love or unselfishness brings to such God's riches, and concerning this the faithful follower of Christ Jesus said: "O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God!" (Romans 11:33) The riches of Jehovah are so boundless that no creature can understand them fully, but into these unfathomable riches God admits those who are faithful followers of Christ Jesus.

The 144,000 members of the royal house are the only ones taken from amongst men who find their everlasting abiding place in the invisible realm of Jehovah God, and concerning these it is written: "Beloved, now are we the sons of God; and it doth not yet appear what we shall be; but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is."—1 John 3:2.

Does that mean that none aside from the 144,000 will ever be the possessors of riches which are bestowed by Jehovah? No, such is not the teaching of God's Word. The 144,000 spirit creatures constitute the royal house, which company shares with Christ Jesus in his kingdom, and to the twelve apostles, representing all the faithful, the promise is made: "And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me, in the regeneration,

when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel." (Matthew 19:28) This proves that there must be and will be a regeneration, including the obedient ones of mankind, and in this work of regeneration the 144,000 shall share with Christ Jesus, serving under his direction.

Instructing his disciples, which instructions apply to all who would live, Jesus said: "Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: for where your treasure is, there will your heart be also." (Matthew 6:19-21) These words apply to those called to be followers of Christ Jesus, to be sure; but they also apply to all who will do the will of God.

Does one have to go to heaven in order to lay up treasures in heaven? No. A person may lay up treasures in heaven even though he does not go to heaven. All riches of treasures proceed from heaven, and riches from such treasure house result to those who receive a knowledge of God's purposes, as stated in his Word, and who then are diligent in their endeavors to do the will of God. Jehovah is the source of riches, and Christ Jesus the dispenser thereof. Men who devote themselves to acquiring material riches on earth and ignore the instruction of the Lord are acquiring that which perishes and disappears. Those who devote themselves to know and to do the will of God are laying up riches that endure for ever. The riches that obedient men shall receive on earth come

from heaven. Jehovah God is the giver of every good and perfect gift.—James 1:17.

The treasures which many have been laying up on this earth will avail them nothing in the end. Selfishness has moved men to build up great material wealth, and this they have done at the cost of much suffering to others, and therefore their treasure is of no lasting value to them; and concerning such it is written, in James 5:2, 3: "Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are moth-eaten. Your gold and silver is cankered; and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire. Ye have heaped treasure together for the last days."

The words of Jesus show that riches thus acquired are not availing or helpful in time of distress or great need. The man of good will who desires to know and to do that which is pleasing to the Almighty God diligently searches God's Word in order to gain a knowledge of God and Christ and to learn the right way, and thus he finds how he may lay up treasures in heaven that shall be available to him and bring everlasting joy and comfort.

The Scriptures and facts show that the selection of the 144,000 now is about completed. What is written in this book is written chiefly for the aid of those people of good will now on earth who desire to find in the Word of God the way that leads them into the riches that will never perish. Those who have set their hearts to do the will of God will find such treasure of riches. These riches proceed from God and are his blessing upon man, and with such God adds no sorrow, but, on the contrary, adds lasting peace

and happiness. You will now be desirous of finding out what are the provisions Jehovah has made for the millions of men on earth who want to do right but who will never be taken to heaven.

CHAPTER II

JONADAB

JEHOVAH sent his commissioned angel to the vicinity of earth, who there announced in the hearing of men the birth of Jesus, the Savior of the world of humankind. There accompanied that messenger from heaven a "multitude of the heavenly host", and that multitude, immediately following the announcement of the birth of Jesus, sung a marvelous anthem that has resounded through the earth from then until now. As they sung the praises of Almighty God that host was heard saying: "Glory, in the highest, unto God! and on earth peace, among men of good-will." (Luke 2:14, *Rotherham*) Other translators render this text in this manner: "Glory be to God in the highest heavens, and on earth peace among men who please him!" (*Weymouth*) "Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace among men in whom he is well pleased." (*Revised Version*) That divine message proclaimed from on high proves beyond all doubt that God will have on earth a class of human creatures who are of good will toward God and his Christ, and that such human creatures will have everlasting peace. It does not mean good will amongst all men, as the text has often been applied; but it means peace among those men on earth who are of good will toward Jehovah and Christ Jesus. It is for the benefit of such that the great ransom sacrifice is provided.

Today the earth is filled with strife, and among all the nations there is no peace. In every nation extreme selfishness prevails and crime and gross wickedness are rampant. All worldly organizations are selfish and indulge in unrighteousness, and this includes every organization or denomination called "a church" on earth. From the sure word of divine prophecy, and from the undisputed physical facts, we know that extremely selfish and wicked organizations control the earth and soon these wicked organizations shall cease for ever during a time of great tribulation such as mankind never before have seen or even imagined. Such tribulation will be brought upon the wicked and selfish organizations by Jehovah himself in order to rid the universe of all unrighteousness.

The Scriptures and facts also show beyond all doubt that out from that great tribulation there will come a multitude of men of good will toward God and his kingdom and that such multitude has already become apparent and is coming forward singing the praises of Jehovah and saying: "Salvation [be ascribed] to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb." (Revelation 7:9, 10) Such are the ones that recognize Jehovah as the true and almighty God, and Christ Jesus as God's anointed King and the only hope of the peoples and nations of the earth. A knowledge of Jehovah's purpose toward those of good will is now of most vital importance. Diligence in gaining that knowledge should now be exercised by all men of good will, because now it is the privilege of such to learn of God's purposes. Those who do so will in due time fill the earth with the praises of Jehovah and his kingdom and will enter into fullness

of peace, prosperity and riches beyond the fondest dream of natural man.

In God's infallible word there are recorded these ringing truths: "For if by one man's [Adam's] offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace, and of the gift of righteousness, shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ. Therefore, as by the offence of one [Adam] judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one [Jesus Christ] the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life. For as by one man's [Adam's] disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one [Christ Jesus] shall many be made righteous."—Romans 5:17-19.

"Jesus . . . was made a little lower than the angels, for the suffering of death, . . . that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man." (Hebrews 2:9) These scriptures show that the value of the sacrifice of Christ Jesus is made available to every man who will gain a knowledge of Jehovah's gracious purpose, and who will then obey the will of God. Otherwise stated, the death of Jesus as the ransom price would be available for every human creature provided every human creature would believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and Jehovah, and serve God faithfully. Those who spurn the Word of God, of course, cannot receive the benefit of the ransom sacrifice. It would be wholly inconsistent for God to extend the benefits of the ransom sacrifice to the wicked. Those who have been willfully wicked, and who have therefore refused to avail themselves of a knowledge of God's Word and obey him, Jehovah specifically declares that such he will destroy. "The Lord preserveth all them that

love him; but all the wicked will he destroy." (Psalm 145:20) It at once becomes apparent to all reasonable creatures that if they would receive the riches that God has in store for humankind they must know Jehovah, know Christ Jesus, know the Word of God, and then prove their love for God and Christ by obedience. God created the earth for men to inhabit, and he made it not in vain, and such is conclusive proof that the place of everlasting abode of men who obey the Lord will be upon the earth. (Isaiah 45:12, 18) The time is now here when all persons of good will on the earth may gain the desired knowledge of the purpose of Jehovah to bestow upon them, through his kingdom, the riches that proceed from heaven.

From the day that God led the Israelites by the hand of Moses out of Egypt until the end of the reign of Zedekiah, the last king of Israel, in the year 606 B.C., the Israelites were God's peculiar people, chosen for a purpose. With that people God made a covenant, and had they been faithful he would have taken out from Israel the "people for his name". Becoming unfaithful, they were cast away as a nation. During the time the Israelites were in the favor of God he used them to make many prophetic pictures, foretelling greater things to come to pass in the future as such things pertain to his kingdom under Christ and to the blessings that men will receive by and through that kingdom. By the hand of Moses as the mediator God gave to the Israelites his law, and the Scriptures record that 'the law was a shadow of good things to come'. (Hebrews 10:1) The many things which the Israelites did when under the favor of God, and the things that other people did in con-

nection with the Israelites, foreshadowed things to come to pass at the end of the world. (1 Corinthians 10:11) Now the end of the world has come and those prophetic pictures or dramas are, by the grace of God, made clear, to the end that those who are devoted to God may see and understand the meaning thereof and thus ascertain God's purpose. Some of these pictures we here examine, which will enable you to more clearly see the purpose of Jehovah.

Among the many prophetic pictures of the Bible is that concerning Jehu, one of the kings of Israel, and in which prophetic drama a man named Jonadab was invited by Jehu to join him in his chariot. That prophetic drama aids those who now have faith in God and in his Word to locate the men of good will who are on the earth at the present time and to whom the message delivered by the angelic host at the birth of Jesus now applies. You will want to learn about Jonadab and of the relation you bear to those foreshadowed by him.

Some historical facts concerning Israel's rulers, and in which Jehu figures, will be of interest at this point. The ten tribes of Israel had rebelled against the house of David and had selected their own king. Asa was king of Judah and reigned at Jerusalem about 979 B.C. The ten tribes were located in the north part of Palestine. Omri, a captain in the army of Israel, seized the throne of Israel, making himself king. Later he bought the site of Samaria and built his royal house there, where he reigned over the ten tribes of Israel. (1 Kings 16:16-24) Ahab succeeded Omri as king of Israel. Ahab married Jezebel, the daughter of Ethbaal. To Ahab and Jezebel was born a daughter named

Athaliah. Some time later Elijah prophesied concerning the coming of the three and one-half years of famine. Afterwards Ahab was killed in battle, and was succeeded by his son Ahaziah.—1 Kings 22: 34-40.

Athaliah the daughter of Ahab and Jezebel married Jehoram, the heir to the throne over Judah. He began to reign about 913 B.C., at Jerusalem. (2 Chronicles 21: 1) He was succeeded to the throne by Ahaziah the son of Athaliah, who was a grandson of Jezebel. Joram (Jehoram) the son of Ahab succeeded Ahaziah his brother to the throne of Israel. Elijah was taken away, and was succeeded by the prophet Elisha. Then Jehu the son of Jehoshaphat, the son of Nimshi, was anointed to be king over Israel. (2 Kings 9: 1-6) Shortly thereafter Jehu slew Joram (or Jehoram). (2 Kings 9: 24) Thereafter Jehu wiped out the entire house of Ahab.

THE KEY

Jehovah's purpose in having the house of Ahab destroyed furnishes the main key to the understanding of the work that Jehu performed and what it foreshadowed. Ahab pictured Satan, that old Serpent, the Devil. Jezebel, his wife, pictured Satan's "woman" or organization. Their offspring or seed pictures 'the seed of the Serpent', which must be destroyed because anti-God, anti-Christ and anti-Kingdom. The work of Jehu pictures Jehovah's procedure in destroying that which has brought depravity upon the human race and dishonor upon Jehovah's name.

The chief development leading up to the slaughter work done by Jehu was Baal worship, which is Devil worship. The name "Baal" means "to be master;

hence, to marry, to be the husband and, figuratively, the owner". Baal worship therefore appears to be the worship of the Devil by joining the organization of which the Devil is the master, husband and owner, and by accepting him, the Devil, as lord and head. "Baal-peor" means the practice of this Devil religion in connection with lewd and immoral women. It was a seductive means of turning men away from Jehovah God.

Balaam, the soothsayer from Mesopotamia, taught Balak the king of Moab how to seduce the Israelites in connection with this devilish religion of Baal-peor. That Jehovah hated the detestable thing is shown by the following: "And Israel abode in Shittim, and the people began to commit whoredom with the daughters of Moab. And they called the people unto the sacrifices of their gods: and the people did eat, and bowed down to their gods. And Israel joined himself unto Baal-peor; and the anger of the Lord was kindled against Israel. And the Lord said unto Moses, Take all the heads of the people, and hang them up before the Lord against the sun, that the fierce anger of the Lord may be turned away from Israel. And Moses said unto the judges of Israel, Slay ye every one his men that were joined unto Baal-peor." (Numbers 25:1-5) That wicked Balaam was slain by the sword at the command of the Lord given to Moses. —Numbers 31:8.

After the ten tribes withdrew from Judah and set up their own kingdom at Samaria, it was Omri who gave official sanction to satanic worship by the Israelites. Ahab followed him on the throne, and concerning him it is written: "And Ahab the son of Omri

did evil in the sight of the Lord above all that were before him. And it came to pass, as if it had been a light thing for him to walk in the sins of Jeroboam the son of Nebat, that he took to wife Jezebel the daughter of Ethbaal king of the Zidonians, and went and served Baal, and worshipped him. And he reared up an altar for Baal in the house of Baal, which he had built in Samaria. And Ahab made a grove; and Ahab did more to provoke the Lord God of Israel to anger than all the kings of Israel that were before him."—1 Kings 16:30-33.

The three and one-half years' famine came upon Israel even as Elijah had prophesied. About the time of the end of that famine Elijah met Ahab and then and there told Ahab to his face that his practice of the Devil religion was the real cause of the trouble upon Israel. "And it came to pass, when Ahab saw Elijah, that Ahab said unto him, Art thou he that troubleth Israel? And he answered, I have not troubled Israel; but thou and thy father's house, in that ye have forsaken the commandments of the Lord, and thou hast followed Baalim."—1 Kings 18:17, 18.

Ahab and Jezebel maintained "the prophets of Baal" by which the Israelites were debauched and turned away from Jehovah. Jehovah God used Elijah to execute His judgment upon these four hundred and fifty prophets of Baal. Later, when Jehu was addressing an assembly of the people, he said to them: "Ahab served Baal." (2 Kings 10:18) These scriptures definitely show that Ahab was given over entirely to Devil worship.

During Ahab's reign Jehu was an officer in his army. He was a captain and charioteer. At the time

Jehovah told Elijah that Jehu and Elisha must be anointed he also said: "Yet I have left me seven thousand in Israel, all the knees which have not bowed unto Baal, and every mouth which hath not kissed him." (1 Kings 19:18) It seems quite reasonable, therefore, that, although Jehu was serving in the army of Ahab, Jehu was among the seven thousand Israelites that had refused to indulge in the Devil worship or Baalism.

Ahaziah succeeded his father Ahab to the throne. He was injured by a fall, and he sent messengers to inquire of Baal-zebub, meaning the Devil-god of Ekron, concerning his recovery: "And Ahaziah fell down through a lattice in his upper chamber that was in Samaria, and was sick: and he sent messengers, and said unto them, Go, inquire of Baal-zebub the god of Ekron, whether I shall recover of this disease. But the angel of the Lord said to Elijah the Tishbite, Arise, go up to meet the messengers of the king of Samaria, and say unto them, Is it not because there is not a God in Israel, that ye go to inquire of Baal-zebub the god of Ekron? Now, therefore, thus saith the Lord, Thou shalt not come down from that bed on which thou art gone up, but shalt surely die. And Elijah departed."—2 Kings 1:2-4.

Jehoram (or Joram) succeeded Ahaziah to the throne; and while he was not as wicked as Ahab, still Baal worship persisted in Israel during his reign. During his reign the old woman Jezebel was still alive and she continued to sponsor the Devil worship. (2 Kings 3:1-3) Afterwards, concerning Jehu, it is written: "Thus Jehu destroyed Baal out of Israel." (2 Kings 10:28) At that point the Jehu picture ends.

The subsequent facts recorded concerning him do not foreshadow any work done by any servant of Jehovah.

'ELECT SERVANT'

The elect servant of Jehovah is Christ, his beloved Son. (Isaiah 42:1) Jehovah used faithful men of old, designated by him as "prophets", to do work in his name, which prophets and their work foreshadowed greater work to be done in the future. The prophet Elijah faithfully served Jehovah God, and Jehovah used Elijah to express his abomination concerning the Devil (or Baal) religion. Elijah and his work foreshadowed the work done by faithful men on the earth under the direction of Christ Jesus, God's Elect Servant, for the period of time from about A.D. 1878 to the year 1918. Elijah was taken away in a whirlwind, and Elisha succeeded him in the office of prophet and servant of God. The work that Elisha thereafter did foreshadowed the work done on the earth by the faithful followers of Christ Jesus and under the direction of Christ Jesus, God's Elect Servant, from and after the time the Lord Jesus comes to the temple of Jehovah.—Malachi 3:1-3.

Such faithful ones serving under Christ Jesus the Scriptures designate as the "faithful and wise servant" class (Matthew 24:45-47), and to that faithful class the Lord commits his kingdom interests on earth; and this faithful servant class is commissioned by the Lord to advertise his kingdom by preaching this good news, gospel, or message of the kingdom to those who will hear amongst all the nations of the earth. When Elijah was taken away there was a short period of time elapsing before Elisha began his work. The Scrip-

tures and the facts show that the work which the man Elijah the prophet did foreshadows a work done by the faithful servant class under Christ Jesus, and which work ended in A.D. 1918; that there was then a short period of time of inactivity on the part of the true followers of Christ Jesus, which period of inactivity was followed by a greater work, which latter work was foreshadowed by the prophet Elisha and which activity is herein spoken of as "the Elisha work" or "work of the Elisha period". This work of the Elisha period or Elisha work began in A.D. 1919 and must continue until the witness work is done. Those who prove entirely faithful to God in doing this work foreshadowed by the prophets are made part of his 'elect servant' class, of which Christ Jesus is Head and Chief. Such faithful ones are brought into the temple of God and are appointed and anointed specifically to be witnesses to Jehovah. —Isaiah 43:10-12.

King Jehu was a type or picture of Jehovah's elect servant and sometimes foreshadowed both Christ Jesus and his faithful followers. The fulfillment of the Jehu prophetic drama must take place after the coming of the Lord Jesus to the temple of Jehovah, which coming was in A.D. 1918. Jehu came in contact with the prophet Elijah and lived for more than twenty-eight years of the period of the prophet Elisha. This appears to mean that Jehovah, during the Elijah period, that is, from A.D. 1878 to A.D. 1918, began to prepare a people to be witnesses to the name of Jehovah, and that those who prove faithful during that period were brought over into the Elisha period, which began in A.D. 1919, and that these are made mem-

bers of God's organization and are designated the "faithful and wise servant" class. It is upon such faithful ones that God bestows his "new name", calling them "Jehovah's witnesses"; and these continuing faithful unto death are the ones that are changed in "the first resurrection" into the likeness of the Lord Jesus Christ. (Revelation 20:6) This would show that Jehovah's witnesses are embraced within the picture or drama made by Jehu and Jonadab. Being associated with them in the work being done enables us to locate the class whom Jonadab represented or pictured.

IN SUPPORT

In support of the conclusion that Jehu pictured Jehovah's 'elect servant' the following is submitted: Jehu was born under the law covenant and was therefore an Israelite, in covenant relationship with Jehovah, and which facts are shown by the Scriptures and God's dealing with him. (2 Kings 13:1-6; 14:23-27) The fact that he was against Baal worship is further proof that he was in the favor of the Lord God.

The name "Jehu" means "Jehovah is he". His name is emphatic in calling attention to the fact that Jehovah is he that is the Supreme One, and this is the same fact to which the "servant" class, including Jehovah's witnesses, the "remnant", now call the attention of the people. The names of his father and grandfather are also significant. Jehu was the son of Jehoshaphat, who was the son of Nimshi. (2 Kings 9:2, 14) "Nimshi," the name of his grandfather, means "extricated", being probably derived from *mashah,* the primitive root word, meaning to "pull out" and

being the same root word from which the name Moses is derived. "Jehoshaphat," the name of the father of Jehu, means "Jehovah-judged, that is, vindicated". The latter part of the name, *shaphat,* means "to judge or pronounce judgment or sentence either for or against; and, by implication, to govern or rule and vindicate". This Jehoshaphat, the son of Nimshi, is not the same as Jehoshaphat mentioned in 1 Kings 15:24 as the son of Asa. These two names therefore, Nimshi and Jehoshaphat, would represent that which is taken out or pulled out and used for the vindication of Jehovah's name.

It was Jehovah who gave order for the anointing of Jehu to be king over Israel, and therefore the anointing was by Jehovah. Ahab was never anointed by Jehovah. So far as the record discloses, Jehu was the only man ever anointed by order of Jehovah to be king over Israel the ten-tribe kingdom. The record is: "And Jehu the son of Nimshi shalt thou anoint to be king over Israel." (1 Kings 19:16) Acting under instructions from the Lord, Elisha directed his "young man" to go and perform the anointing: "And when thou comest thither, look out there Jehu, the son of Jehoshaphat, the son of Nimshi, and go in, and make him arise up from among his brethren, and carry him to an inner chamber; then take the box of oil, and pour it on his head, and say, Thus saith the Lord, I have anointed thee king over Israel. Then open the door, and flee, and tarry not. And he arose, and went into the house; and he poured the oil on his head, and said unto him, Thus saith the Lord God of Israel, I have anointed thee king over the people of the Lord, even over Israel."—2 Kings 9:2, 3, 6.

Jehu was duly anointed and commissioned as the executioner of Jehovah to exterminate Baal, or Devil worship, in Israel. His divinely given commission reads: "And thou shalt smite the house of Ahab thy master, that I may avenge the blood of my servants the prophets, and the blood of all the servants of the Lord, at the hand of Jezebel. For the whole house of Ahab shall perish; and I will cut off from Ahab him that pisseth against the wall, and him that is shut up and left in Israel. And I will make the house of Ahab like the house of Jeroboam the son of Nebat, and like the house of Baasha the son of Ahijah; and the dogs shall eat Jezebel in the portion of Jezreel, and there shall be none to bury her."–2 Kings 9:7-10.

Jehu fulfilled his commission. "And it came to pass, that, when Jehu was executing judgment upon the house of Ahab . . . " (2 Chronicles 22:7, 8); which words prove that he was an executioner. In carrying out his commission from the Lord Jehu gained Jehovah's "well done" or approval, and for that reason Jehovah made the covenant with Jehu that his sons should continue to reign on the throne. (2 Kings 10:30) This statement is that they should reign for four generations, that is to say, a foursquare or complete succession to the throne. Jehu and his house occupied the throne of Israel for a hundred years. Jehu himself reigned twenty-eight years. (2 Kings 10:36) Jehoahaz, his first generation, reigned for seventeen years, and during that time God favored Israel. (2 Kings 13:4, 5) Joash, or Jehoash, the grandson of Jehu, was on the throne of Israel at the death of Elisha, and he was favored by Jehovah's prophet. —2 Kings 13:14-23.

At Mount Carmel Elijah had slaughtered four hundred and fifty of the priests of Baal; and Jehu duplicated that slaughter work, only on a far greater scale. (1 Kings 18:40; 2 Kings 10:18-25) Elijah made a start at the slaughter work of Baal worship, and Jehu completed that work. (2 Kings 10:28) Another point in his favor is that Jehu was anti-Jezebel. He had and manifested the spirit similar to that of the Lord's approved people who have and manifest the anti-Jezebel spirit, as described in Revelation 2:20-23. He rode over Jezebel in utter contempt and trampled her to death. Jehu was a vindicator of Jehovah's word, in this, that he fulfilled the word of Jehovah spoken by his prophet Elijah against Ahab and Jezebel. In this work he also completed that which Elijah had begun. Elijah had called down fire from heaven in the presence of the prophets of Baal and Ahab at Mount Carmel. His prayer was: "Hear me, O LORD, hear me; that this people may know that thou art the LORD God." (1 Kings 18:37) That was a vindication of Jehovah's reputation, but not sufficient to cause the reformation of Ahab and Jezebel. Baal worship continued, and the Lord God used Jehu to vindicate his word and his name in connection with Baal worship. (2 Kings 9:25-37; 10:9-11) These are merely abstract statements of historical facts showing that Jehu was used by Jehovah in performing the work of execution upon the representatives of Satan, and therefore supporting the conclusion that he foreshadowed the work of executing God's judgment upon Satan and his organization and which the Scriptures plainly show will be done by Christ Jesus and those associated with him.

Jehu was a fighting man. He was in the chariot corps and a captain in the army of Israel. Whenever Jehovah favored the army of Israel that army was victorious over the enemy, and hence the army became and was the army of the Lord of hosts; and that, being true, would make Jehu a captain in the army of the Lord of hosts. (1 Kings 20:1-30; 2 Kings 3:5-25; 6:24-7:16) Jehu was known and was recognized by reason of his rapid driving, because he drove "furiously", that is, "in madness." (2 Kings 9:16, 20, marginal reading) The fact that Jehu was associated with the war chariot of Israel seems to suggest that those who fulfill the Jehu picture must have to do and are associated with "the chariot of the cherubims" (1 Chronicles 28:18) that pictures the colossal chariot of Jehovah's organization, which the prophet Ezekiel saw in vision and which the Ezekiel class understands to picture Jehovah's great organization. (Ezekiel 1; 10) "The chariots of God are twenty thousand, even thousands of angels; the Lord is among them as in Sinai, in the holy place." (Psalm 68:17) "The shield of his mighty men is made red, the valiant men are in scarlet; the chariots shall be with flaming torches in the day of his preparation, and the fir trees shall be terribly shaken." (Nahum 2:3) "Was the Lord displeased against the rivers? was thine anger against the rivers? was thy wrath against the sea, that thou didst ride upon thine horses and thy chariots of salvation?" (Habakkuk 3:8) "Who layeth the beams of his chambers in the waters; who maketh the clouds his chariot; who walketh upon the wings of the wind."—Psalm 104:3.

The word of Jehovah concerning the house of Ahab and Jezebel was fully vindicated with the destruction of that house. In his due time Jehovah God will completely vindicate his word and his name concerning Satan and his organization by the full and complete destruction thereof. Jehu had done the work well concerning the house of Ahab and Jezebel, but he was not yet through with his execution work specified in his commission. There was something more for him to do.

ZEAL FOR JEHOVAH

Jehu had much zeal for Jehovah, and that is another reason why he pictured Christ, the royal Executioner. Concerning the Lord Jesus it is written: "For the zeal of thine house hath eaten me up; and the reproaches of them that reproached thee are fallen upon me." (Psalm 69:9) Such is the zeal peculiar to the royal house, and therefore is pleasing to Jehovah. Elijah manifested like zeal for the Lord of hosts. After he had slain the prophets of Baal and then went and hid himself in a cave at Mount Horeb, in response to an inquiry from the Lord as to why he was there Elijah said: "I have been very jealous for the Lord God of hosts." (1 Kings 19:10) The word "jealous" in this text means the same as 'zealous' in Psalm 69:9. The two words are derived from the same root. 'Jehovah is a jealous [zealous] God.' (Exodus 20:5; Deuteronomy 5:9) "For the Lord thy God is a consuming fire, even a jealous God."–Deuteronomy 4:24.

Concerning the establishment of the righteous government under Christ the King it is written: "The zeal of the Lord of hosts [Lord of battle] will per-

form this." (Isaiah 9:7) In the Scriptures the words "zealous" and "jealous" are from the same root word: "For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy." (2 Corinthians 11:2) When Paul was defending himself before the Jews he said of himself: 'I was taught according to the perfect manner of the law of the fathers, and was zealous toward God, as ye all are this day.' (Acts 22:3; Philippians 3:6; Colossians 4:13) The remnant of God, who are anointed to do his work, must have this same zeal for Jehovah. "Jesus Christ . . . gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works." (Titus 2:13, 14) The words "zealous" and "jealous" as used in the above scriptures do not mean ill will or hatred or envy, but they do mean a strong, unbending determination to carry out the righteous purpose of the Lord; an unbreakable determination to accomplish that which one is commissioned by the Lord to do. They obey God rather than man.

Jehu drove "furiously", or "with madness", and with an unbending and unbreakable determination that he would permit nothing to hinder him in the accomplishment of his purpose for which he was commissioned. In the very hour that he received his commission he started with his military staff to execute that commission. When the messengers of the kings approached him and inquired why he was thus driving he said to them: 'Get out of my way, and get in the rear; I have no time to waste with you.' Likewise when Christ Jesus received the order from Jehovah to go forth and rule in the midst of the enemy, he started the "war in heaven" and ousted Satan

and his angels from heaven and cast them down to the earth. The Scriptures show that just as soon as the testimony work now in progress is completed, according to the will of Jehovah, Jesus will move without delay and will permit nothing to hinder him in executing the enemy.—Psalm 110:1-6; Revelation 11:17-19; 12:7-12; Matthew 24:14, 21, 22; Psalm 45:3, 4.

The members of the "body of Christ", including the remnant now on the earth, must have the same zeal as that which was manifested by Jehu. To see and to appreciate the fact that the Kingdom is here means that the remnant must be diligent in performing their work until every vestige of the enemy organization falls. (Isaiah 6:9-12) Jehovah has commanded that the testimony work must be done before the slaughter work begins, and the remnant are zealous to do it, fully determined that by the grace of God nothing shall prevent them from doing it faithfully. "I thought on my ways, and turned my feet unto thy testimonies. I made haste, and delayed not, to keep thy commandments. My zeal hath consumed me; because mine enemies have forgotten thy words." —Psalm 119:59, 60, 139.

In doing this work in the name of Jehovah of hosts the remnant must drive rapidly, and many call them mad perverts for so doing. But it matters not what the enemy says; they are doing it with joy. When David went out to fight in the army of the Lord he said: "The king's business required haste." (1 Samuel 21:8) When the Lord's anointed see and appreciate that the Kingdom is here they see that it is time to make haste in obeying God's commandments. They are diligent to make their calling and election

sure. (2 Peter 1:10) They engage in the Lord's service with a zeal peculiar to Jehovah's house. "In that day it shall be said to Jerusalem, Fear thou not; and to Zion, Let not thine hands be slack."—Zephaniah 3:16.

JONADAB

A man by the name of Hemath was the father of the house of Rechab, who was a Kenite. (1 Chronicles 2:55) The Kenites lived in the desert-land between the southern part of Canaan and the mountains of Sinai. They were connected with the Midianites. When Pharaoh sought to kill Moses the young man Moses fled from Egypt and went into the land of Midian and there married the daughter of Jethro a Kenite. (Exodus 2:15-21) The Kenites showed much kindness to Moses when he was in distress, and that kindness Moses never forgot. When the Israelites, under the leadership of Moses, were journeying from Egypt to Canaan they passed by the Kenites, and Moses said to the Kenites: "We are journeying unto the place of which the Lord said, I will give it you; come thou with us, and we will do thee good." (Numbers 10:29) It was from these Kenites that Rechab descended. Rechab was the ancestor of Jehonadab, who was the real founder of the nomadic tribe of Rechabites. In the Scripture his name appears both as "Jehonadab" and as "Jonadab", and hereinafter this man is referred to as or called "Jonadab".

"He and his people had all along been worshippers of Jehovah, circumcised, though not looked upon as belonging to Israel, and probably therefore not considering themselves bound by the Mosaic law and rit-

ual. The worship of Baal was offensive to them. Jehonadab inaugurated a reformation and compelled a more rigid adherence than ever to the old Arab life. They were neither to drink wine, nor build houses, nor sow seed, nor plant nor have any vineyard. All their days they were to dwell in tents. (Jeremiah 35:6, 7) This was to be the condition of their retaining a distinct tribal existence. For two centuries and a half they adhered faithfully to this rule. The invasion of Judah by Nebuchadnezzar, in B.C. 607, drove the Rechabites from their tents to Jerusalem, where they stood proof against temptation, and were specially blessed."—*International Bible Dictionary,* page 550—"Rechab."

Jehu had progressed with his work of execution and had slain the kings and sons of Ahab and others, and when he finished with the forty-two adherents of Ahaziah he met up with Jonadab. Jehu put the question to Jonadab: 'Are you on my side or not?' By that time Jonadab would have heard what Jehu was doing, or probably Jehu told him he was destroying Baalism in Israel; otherwise Jonadab would not have understood the question Jehu put to him: "And when he was departed thence, he lighted on Jehonadab the son of Rechab, coming to meet him: and he saluted him, and said to him, Is thine heart right, as my heart is with thy heart? And Jehonadab answered, It is. If it be, give me thine hand. And he gave him his hand: and he took him up to him into the chariot." (2 Kings 10:15) Manifestly Jehovah permitted Jonadab to appear in this picture for some good purpose, and that purpose when known must be an encouragement and comfort to the faithful. It

does not appear from the record that Jonadab did anything toward the slaying work. What, then, did Jonadab represent in this picture?

Jonadab represented or foreshadowed that class of people now on the earth during the time that the Jehu work is in progress who are of good will, are out of harmony with Satan's organization, take their stand on the side of righteousness, and are the ones whom, if obedient and faithful, the Lord will preserve during the time of Armageddon, take them through that trouble, and give them everlasting life on the earth. These constitute the "sheep" class that favor God's anointed people, because they know that the anointed of the Lord are doing the Lord's work. (Matthew 25:32-40) In support of this conclusion the following is submitted:

The name "Jehonadab" means (according to *Strong's Concordance*) "Jehovah-largess", that is to say, liberal, generous and bountiful. According to another authority the name means "Jehovah is bounteous". His name, therefore, would suggest that Jonadab pictures the class to whom Jehovah is very generous. The Rechabites were sticklers for observing what they considered to be right as they were taught. The Scriptures show that Jonadab followed the course of honesty and meekness and did what he believed to be right, and that he taught his children righteousness and that they followed a like course. The descendants of Jonadab received a commandment from man, but not from Jehovah, that they must drink no wine for ever, that they should not build houses, but must dwell in tents. That meant that they must lead a simple life of self-denial. Their faithfulness

in doing what they had been taught because they understood it to be right the Lord used by way of comparison with the unfaithfulness of Israel in failing to do what they were commanded by Him. God had commanded the Israelites that they should not eat at the Devil's table, which meant that they should have nothing to do with devil worship, and the Israelites disregarded this commandment and turned to Baalism or Devil worship. Today the so-called "organized Christianity", in which the Roman Catholic Hierarchy and its priests take the lead, entirely disregards the commandments of the Lord and attempts to eat and drink at His table while at the same time they partake of the Devil's table by making their organization a part of Satan's world. "Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils." (1 Corinthians 10:21) Jehovah hates a hypocrite.

The Roman Catholic Hierarchy, the official and governing body that rules the religionists of the world, and the so-called "Protestant" organizations are now linked up and jointly form what is called "organized Christianity". What is here said about the Hierarchy and the clergy or ruling body is not applied to the sincere Catholics or sincere Protestants. There are millions of Catholics who are supposed to be members of the Catholic church, but are not members; even the Hierarchy designates them as "Catholic population". No one should be held up to ridicule because he is a Catholic. Sincere Catholics want to know the truth, and what is said here in the way of criticism is for the purpose of enabling honest people to see

how a few men have misled and defrauded millions of honest persons. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy, the governing body, together with the clergy of the other denominations, claim to be the representatives of God and the ones to whom the right is delegated to proclaim his Word. They claim to be Christians; therefore they are at least in an implied covenant to do the will of God. On the contrary, they have not obeyed the commandments of God, but have followed their own selfish desires. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy, that governing religious-political body, has misled and greatly deceived millions of honest persons.

Many of these persons of good will have given support to the Catholic organization, both financially and morally and otherwise, but these honest people of good will have not at all approved the hypocrisy practiced in these organizations. Many other persons of good will outside of the organizations called "organized Christianity" have desired to do right and still have such desire and wish to know and to serve Jehovah God. The time must come when these people of good will toward God will receive an opportunity to hear and to know the truth; and that time has now come. The hypocritical class designated "organized Christianity" was foreshadowed by the faithless Israelites who claimed to be God's people and yet refused to obey God and turned from the worship of God to Baalism or Devil worship. The persons of good will now on the earth were foreshadowed by those of the house of Jonadab. With these observations let us proceed to examine the Scriptures and see how the faithless Israelites stood before God as compared with the Jonadabs.

JONADAB HAILS JEHU'S CHARIOT Page 77

[B L A N K]

Jehovah caused his prophet Jeremiah to utter a prophecy in which the faithless Israelites are strongly contrasted with the Jonadabs, and such prophecy foretells that Jehovah will reject hypocritical "organized Christianity", so called, and particularly the hypocritical leaders thereof, and that he will extend his favor and blessing to the people of good will who take their stand on the side of righteousness, and who were foreshadowed by the house of Jonadab. That prophecy follows: "The word which came unto Jeremiah from the Lord, in the days of Jehoiakim the son of Josiah king of Judah, saying, Go unto the house of the Rechabites, and speak unto them, and bring them into the house of the Lord, into one of the chambers, and give them wine to drink."—Jeremiah 35:1, 2.

This part of the prophecy foreshadows God opening the way for those people of good will now on the earth to be brought into his house or organization and receive his blessings. Many persons of good will are now observed coming into the organization of Jehovah, as this prophecy foreshadowed. The prophet then continues: "Then I took Jaazaniah the son of Jeremiah, the son of Habaziniah, and his brethren, and all his sons, and the whole house of the Rechabites; and I brought them into the house of the Lord, into the chamber of the sons of Hanan, the son of Igdaliah, a man of God, which was by the chamber of the princes, which was above the chamber of Maaseiah the son of Shallum, the keeper of the door: and I set before the sons of the house of the Rechabites pots full of wine, and cups, and I said unto them, Drink ye wine. But they said, We will drink no wine:

for Jonadab the son of Rechab, our father, commanded us, saying, Ye shall drink no wine, neither ye nor your sons for ever."—Jeremiah 35:3-6.

Observe that the Rechabites refused to drink wine that was offered to them, thus showing their determination to be faithful to what they had promised. They were determined to keep their word of promise. The prophecy continues, showing the Rechabites speaking as they had been instructed by Jonadab, the founder of that house, to wit: "Neither shall ye build house, nor sow seed, nor plant vineyard, nor have any: but all your days ye shall dwell in tents; that ye may live many days in the land where ye be strangers. Thus have we obeyed the voice of Jonadab the son of Rechab, our father, in all that he hath charged us, to drink no wine all our days, we, our wives, our sons, nor our daughters; nor to build houses for us to dwell in; neither have we vineyard, nor field, nor seed: but we have dwelt in tents, and have obeyed, and done according to all that Jonadab our father commanded us."—Jeremiah 35:7-10.

Those Rechabites of the house of Jonadab had not set their hearts on worldly riches, such as houses and vineyards. Their dwelling in tents symbolically says they were sojourners, looking for a better government, which like desire had filled the hearts of other faithful men of old who by faith had looked forward to a better government, to wit, the righteous government of God under Christ Jesus, and which is symbolized by a city. (See Hebrews 11:14-16.) When the city of Jerusalem was threatened by the allied armies of the east the Jonadabs went to dwell in Jerusalem, thus illustrating or picturing the people of good will

at the present time seeking a place of peace and safety with God's organization on earth.

Then the Lord by the prophecy draws a strong contrast of the one with the other, showing his displeasure with the covenant-breakers, the Israelites, and showing his pleasure in those men of the house of Rechab, the Jonadabs, that had faithfully kept their agreement to do what they had promised. The prophecy continues: "Then came the word of the Lord unto Jeremiah, saying, Thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel; Go and tell the men of Judah, and the inhabitants of Jerusalem, Will ye not receive instruction to hearken to my words? saith the Lord. The words of Jonadab the son of Rechab, that he commanded his sons not to drink wine, are performed; for unto this day they drink none, but obey their father's commandment: notwithstanding I have spoken unto you, rising early and speaking; but ye hearkened not unto me. I have sent also unto you all my servants the prophets, rising up early and sending them, saying, Return ye now every man from his evil way, and amend your doings, and go not after other gods to serve them, and ye shall dwell in the land which I have given to you and to your fathers; but ye have not inclined your ear, nor hearkened unto me."—Jeremiah 35: 12-15.

This prophecy concerning the Israelites exactly describes the course of action taken by the so-called "organized Christianity" under the leadership of the governing factors, and which is so apparent today among these organizations on earth. Particularly the ruling element of the Roman Catholic organization, and the clergy of other organizations, have made great

pretenses of serving God, but in fact have been engaged in serving the Devil and by their course of action have deceived millions and led them to believe that these governing factors or clergymen are servants of God. The whole ruling element, to wit, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy and the chief men supporting their organization, and who have controlled and ruled the "Catholic population", have been entirely unfaithful to God. The honest, sincere ones of the "Catholic population", who are of good will toward God, were foreshadowed by the Jonadabs.

Then Jehovah directs the prophet Jeremiah to speak these words, which words apply to the people of good will, to wit: "Because the sons of Jonadab the son of Rechab have performed the commandment of their father, which he commanded them; but this people hath not hearkened unto me: therefore thus saith the Lord God of hosts, the God of Israel, Behold, I will bring upon Judah, and upon all the inhabitants of Jerusalem, all the evil that I have pronounced against them: because I have spoken unto them, but they have not heard; and I have called unto them, but they have not answered. And Jeremiah said unto the house of the Rechabites, Thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel, Because ye have obeyed the commandment of Jonadab your father, and kept all his precepts, and done according unto all that he hath commanded you; therefore thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel; Jonadab the son of Rechab shall not want a man to stand before me for ever." —Jeremiah 35:16-19.

The marginal reading of this verse is: "There shall not a man be cut off from Jonadab the son of Rechab

to stand before me for ever." Here is a positive promise from Jehovah to the people of good will now on the earth, who take their stand firmly on the side of the Lord and continue faithful there, that they shall in due time enter into great riches and stand before the Lord for ever approved.

Moses, who was a type of the 'Elect Servant' of Jehovah, Christ Jesus, invited the Kenites, from which came the Jonadabs, to "come . . . with us, and we will do thee good". (Numbers 10:29) That foreshadowed members of the 'elect servant' class today saying to the people of good will, in effect: 'Come with us, and learn to know Jehovah and Christ Jesus, and serve them, and good will result to you.'

Recurring now to the prophetic drama or picture performed by Jehu, and in which Jonadab appears, the Scripture record shows conclusively that Jonadab was against the Devil religion called Baalism. The record says that Jehu "lighted on [(*margin*) found] Jehonadab the son of Rechab, coming to meet him: and he saluted him, and said to him, Is thine heart right, as my heart is with thy heart? And Jehonadab answered, It is. If it be, give me thine hand. And he gave him his hand; and he took him up to him into the chariot".—2 Kings 10:15.

Jonadab knew that Jehu was then doing the work commanded by Jehovah to destroy the Devil worshipers out of the land, and Jonadab knew that such was a righteous work, and he was in full sympathy therewith. Likewise at the present time those people on earth of good will, and who learn of the work that Jehovah's witnesses are now doing at the commandment of the Lord, know that such is a righteous work,

and these people of good will are in full sympathy with that work and desire to be identified with that righteous work.

A chariot symbolically represents or pictures an organization; and since Jehu was riding in a chariot while engaged in the work of Jehovah, his chariot pictured Jehovah's organization now on earth, that is, the "faithful servant" class, Jehovah's remnant, and who are Jehovah's witnesses acting under the leadership of Christ Jesus. Jehu took hold of the hand of Jonadab and asked Jonadab to get up into Jehu's chariot, and in this he pictured the Lord Jesus giving aid to those persons of good will who desire to unite themselves to his organization. Note that Jehu did this after Jonadab had sincerely expressed himself as being of the same heart or mind as Jehu, which means that he was in full sympathy with Jehu and his work and that his motive was like that of Jehu, namely, unselfish, and that his action showed him on the side of Jehovah God. This proves that those who would have the blessing of the Lord God must declare themselves on the side of God and his kingdom, and must take their position with the visible organization of Jehovah on earth.

Jehu, having found Jonadab in full heart accord and in sympathy with him and his work, no doubt told Jonadab what he was about to do: "And he said, Come with me, and see my zeal for the Lord. So they made him ride in his chariot." (2 Kings 10:16) Jehu was not boasting of his zeal, but was notifying Jonadab to observe the proper course of one who agrees to do the will of God. What Jehu did he did earnestly and enthusiastically. His words mean that he

was determined to accomplish the purpose and work which Jehovah God had assigned to him and that he would do so in the name and by the grace of the Lord. Jonadab went with Jehu and doubtless supported Jehu in his work, doing what he was asked or told to do. By giving his hand to Jonadab Jehu symbolically said: 'I will use my power for you and give you aid, support and comfort, and teach you the right way to serve Jehovah God.' Likewise the Lord now says to the people of good will.

Jehu, accompanied by Jonadab, went to Samaria, where the remaining members of the house of Ahab were destroyed. Then Jehu prepared for a clean-up of all the leaders of Devil worship throughout Israel. The fact that Jonadab was with Jehu on this commission shows that he was thereby giving testimony against the Devil and for Jehovah, and thus illustrates the Jonadabs by their bold and courageous course of action bearing testimony to the name of Jehovah God and his kingdom at this day. Jehu employed strategy that he might gather all the priests of Baal or Devil worshipers at one place and there dispatch them: "And Jehu gathered all the people together, and said unto them, Ahab served Baal a little, but Jehu shall serve him much. Now therefore call unto me all the prophets of Baal, all his servants, and all his priests; let none be wanting: for I have a great sacrifice to do to Baal; whosoever shall be wanting, he shall not live. But Jehu did it in subtilty, to the intent that he might destroy the worshippers of Baal. And Jehu said, Proclaim a solemn assembly for Baal. And they proclaimed it. And Jehu sent through all Israel; and all the worshippers of

Baal came, so that there was not a man left that came not.

"And they came into the house of Baal; and the house of Baal was full from one end to another. And he said unto him that was over the vestry, Bring forth vestments for all the worshippers of Baal. And he brought them forth vestments. And Jehu went, and Jehonadab the son of Rechab, into the house of Baal, and said unto the worshippers of Baal, Search, and look that there be here with you none of the servants of the LORD, but the worshippers of Baal only. And when they went in to offer sacrifices and burnt offerings, Jehu appointed fourscore men without, and said, If any of the men whom I have brought into your hands escape, he that letteth him go, his life shall be for the life of him. And it came to pass, as soon as he had made an end of offering the burnt offering, that Jehu said to the guard and to the captains, Go in, and slay them; let none come forth. And they smote them with the edge of the sword; and the guard and the captains cast them out, and went to the city of the house of Baal. And they brought forth the images out of the house of Baal, and burned them. And they brake down the image of Baal, and brake down the house of Baal, and made it a draught house unto this day [the day the prophecy was written]. Thus Jehu destroyed Baal out of Israel."—2 Kings 10:18-28.

The commission given to Jehu by God to destroy Baalism shows that the Devil religion is an abomination in the sight of Jehovah. This shows that hypocrisy in the name of the Lord, as practiced by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy and the other religionists,

is a great abomination in the sight of Jehovah. When Jehu went into the house of Baal, accompanied by Jonadab, that was a testimony on the part of Jonadab that he was against the Devil worship and on the side of Jehovah. Likewise at the present time, when the men of good will, regardless of their previous church associations, now openly associate themselves with Jehovah's witnesses and give aid and support to them in their work, the Jonadabs, or people of good will, thereby give testimony before the people that they are against the hypocritical or Devil religion as practiced by "organized Christianity", so called, and that they are on the side of Jehovah and his kingdom.

There are many other scriptures that fully corroborate this conclusion. Jehovah and his King, Christ Jesus, now afford to the Jonadab class the opportunity to prove their love for the kingdom of righteousness by joining with Jehovah's witnesses in the giving of testimony and in supporting such work financially, morally and actively in the preparation and publication of the kingdom message. This gospel of good news of the kingdom must now be told to the people in obedience to the commandment of the Lord, and it is the privilege and duty of the Jonadab class to have part in the delivering of this glorious message.

Jehu called upon all the Baal or Devil worshipers to clearly identify themselves, and this they did by wearing certain garments. A vestment or garment is symbolic of identification. For the purpose of making those men identify themselves Jehu said: "Bring forth vestments for all the worshippers of Baal"; and all others were excluded from the Baal temple.

This symbolically says that there must be a division amongst the people so that all may be identified as on one side or the other, that is, either on the side of the Devil or on the side of Jehovah God and his kingdom. Jehovah's servants are now commanded to publish the truth and to call upon all who are against the kingdom message to don the vestments or garments identifying themselves and thus declaring themselves against the kingdom of God. Those who join with the anointed of the Lord in bearing testimony to his name indicate where they stand by separating themselves from the hypocritical religionists. When Elijah, on another occasion, was causing the Devil worshipers to identify themselves he said: 'If Jehovah be Almighty God, follow him; if the Devil be your god, follow him.' (1 Kings 18:21) That corresponds exactly with what Jehu did, and shows that at the present time God brings about conditions causing the people to take their stand either on the side of the Devil or on the side of the Lord, and thus identify themselves. There are many of the prophetic pictures in the Scriptures showing a division of the people, and in each instance God causes knowledge to be brought to the attention of the people, thereby affording the people an opportunity to choose voluntarily whom they will serve.

Let it be kept clearly in mind that Jehovah God is not trying to save men. He has not commissioned any company or people on the earth to try to save men. God does not try to do anything, but accomplishes his purpose according to his will. Jehovah has provided boundless blessings of riches for those who do serve him, and he causes a knowledge of his

truth to be brought to the attention of men that they may voluntarily choose whether they will serve God and receive his blessing, or serve selfish men who are dominated and controlled by the Devil. It is the men who exercise faith in God and in Christ Jesus as the Redeemer of man, and who then prove their faithfulness by boldly making known this fact to others, that receive the blessings of the Lord. Such men delight to declare the truth of God's Word and his kingdom to others. To that end God sends the truth to the people; and this he does by sending throughout the land his witnesses to declare his name and his kingdom, and by this means he affords an opportunity and privilege to men of good will to join with his anointed witnesses in declaring his message of truth to others, that they may intelligently act and choose whom they wish to serve. The prophetic drama of Jehu and Jonadab, therefore, clearly illustrates the people of good will now on the earth taking their stand on the side of God and his kingdom and serving with Jehovah's witnesses in making known these truths to the people.

'MARK FOREHEADS'

It has pleased Jehovah by other prophets to identify and locate his people of good will now on earth. Jehovah's invisible organization, which is in heaven, and those on the earth who are a part of his organization work in exact harmony. The invisible or heavenly part of the organization is likewise in control. In the prophecy of Ezekiel a prophetic drama or picture appears, showing the working together of the heavenly part of God's organization with those on

earth and disclosing the manner of instructing and separating the people. The prophecy recorded at the ninth chapter of Ezekiel, and which is fully supported by other prophecies, shows a separating work taking place shortly preceding the battle of the great day of God Almighty, otherwise called "Armageddon", and clearly identifies the class of people of good will.

Christ Jesus is the mighty Executive Officer of Jehovah, and the one who leads the host of heaven at the battle of the great day of God Almighty, and who executes Jehovah's judgment upon the Devil's organization. In the prophecy of Ezekiel above mentioned these words are recorded: "He cried also in mine ears with a loud voice, saying, Cause them that have charge over the city to draw near, even every man with his destroying weapon in his hand." (Ezekiel 9:1) This command directs the invisible army of Jehovah to make preparations for the final battle, and for this reason the invisible army of the Lord is told to draw near and each one to have in his hand a slaughter weapon. In the vision Ezekiel beheld six creatures approaching: "And, behold, six men came from the way of the higher gate, which lieth toward the north, and every man a slaughter weapon in his hand; and one man among them was clothed with linen, with a writer's inkhorn by his side; and they went in, and stood beside the brasen altar."—Ezekiel 9:2.

Six is a symbolic number used in the Scriptures to denote incompleteness, whereas the number seven symbolizes completeness. Jehovah's organization being one and at complete unity, the "six men" in this drama

symbolically discloses and identifies the invisible or heavenly part of God's organization, while the one man with the writer's inkhorn by his side, and clothed in linen, pictures the "faithful servant" class on earth, the visible part of God's organization under the command of the Lord Jesus Christ. The six, representing the heavenly, and the one, representing the earthly, picture the entire organization in completeness. The earthly part of God's organization is commanded to bear testimony or publish the truth of and concerning Jehovah and his kingdom. The "faithful servant" class on the earth is likened unto a bride adorned for her husband, and concerning this class it is written in the Scriptures: "It was given unto her that she should array herself in fine linen, bright and pure: for the fine linen is the righteous acts of the saints." (Revelation 19:8, *R.V.*) The figure of one creature clothed with linen, and bearing an inkhorn at his side, pictures the entire remnant or servant class; that is, Jehovah's witnesses are pictured. The two parts of the Lord's organization now act in exact harmony. The invisible part does the work of execution of the wicked, while the visible or earthly part does the work of publishing the message of truth, to the end that intelligent creatures may choose which side they will take before the execution takes place. The publishing work must first be done, and when that is done then the invisible part of Jehovah's organization will execute those who are on the side of the Devil and under his wicked organization.

Religion is an integral part of Satan's organization. From the time of Nimrod the Devil has employed religion to reproach the name of Jehovah God and to

deceive men and turn them away from God. Religious organizations are chiefly understood by the people to be made up of those who worship God; but the fact is, those organizations called "religious" are political, the objective of which is to gain and exercise control over the peoples of the earth. Under the dominating control of these so-called "religious organizations" are many persons of good will who have been induced by fear to support the unrighteous and hypocritical organizations. The entire organization on earth is symbolized under the term "city", which God will destroy at Armageddon. Before the destruction takes place Jehovah gives command that his publishers, his witnesses, that is, 'the man with the writer's inkhorn by his side,' must do a certain work, and to this end the Lord gives command: "And the Lord said unto him, Go through the midst of the city, through the midst of Jerusalem, and set a mark upon the foreheads of the men that sigh and that cry, for all the abominations that be done in the midst thereof."—Ezekiel 9:4.

Hypocrisy or Devil worship is exceedingly abominable unto Jehovah. Under the control of the governing part of these religious organizations, to wit, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, there are millions of persons of good will who see the cruel, unjust and wicked things done in the church organizations in the name of God and of Christ, and those persons of good will are pictured as the ones 'who sigh and cry, for all the abominations that be done in the midst thereof'.

It is the will of Jehovah that such persons of good will may have an opportunity to get a knowledge of the truth. The forehead of a man symbolically rep-

resents the seat of intelligence; therefore to 'set a mark upon the forehead of those that sigh and cry' means to give to such people an intelligent perception of the truth of and concerning Jehovah's purpose. That is the work which Jehovah's witnesses are now commanded to do and which work they are doing, by the grace of God, by going from house to house to inform the people of God's purpose. For this reason Jehovah's witnesses have published many books explaining the Scriptures, and these are daily carried to the people who desire to receive 'the mark in their foreheads'; such are the meek or teachable ones who are seeking knowledge. It is these persons of good will, otherwise called "Jonadabs", who receive a knowledge of the truth and who are thus marked in the forehead and who then show that they have been thus marked by attaching themselves to the visible part of God's organization, and go along with Jehovah's witnesses, and join them in giving testimony to others.

In God's due time this witness work, that is to say, the work of setting a mark on the forehead of those that desire the truth, will be done, and this is shown by the words of the prophet: "And, behold, the man clothed with linen, which had the inkhorn by his side, reported the matter, saying, I have done as thou hast commanded me."—Ezekiel 9:11.

This corresponds exactly with the words of Jesus, who commanded that "this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached . . . for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come"; and that end shall come in a time of tribulation such as never before was known in the world. (Matthew 24:14, 21) When

the witness work is done and completed by those pictured as 'the man with the writer's inkhorn and clothed with linen', then will follow the work as pictured in the prophecy by the "six men", that is to say, the heavenly part of God's organization. To this invisible company the Lord Jesus gives command, which is heard by the prophet and is recorded in these words: "And to the others he said in mine hearing, Go ye after him through the city, and smite: let not your eye spare, neither have ye pity: slay utterly old and young, both maids, and little children, and women: but come not near any man upon whom is the mark; and begin at my sanctuary. Then they began at the ancient men which were before the house." (Ezekiel 9:5, 6) This shows that God's Executioner slays all except those who bear the mark in the forehead, and likewise is directed to begin with the "ancient men", that is to say, those high in authority and who exercise governing control over the organization. It is those who are marked in the foreheads that are spared. This appears to mark the beginning or first part of Armageddon, the battle of the great day of God Almighty: "And he said unto them, Defile the house, and fill the courts with the slain: go ye forth. And they went forth, and slew in the city."—Ezekiel 9:7.

This part of the prophecy shows a great slaying work being done and that those who are themselves on the side of the Devil and his organization shall be destroyed and shall not be spared: "And I will dash them one against another, even the fathers and the sons together, saith the Lord: I will not pity,

nor spare, nor have mercy, but destroy them."—Jeremiah 13:14.

It is the Jonadab class who are marked in the forehead that obey the Lord and are spared and protected by the Lord during Armageddon. A more detailed explanation of this prophecy of Ezekiel is found in *Vindication,* Book One, page 94.

NOAH AND FAMILY

Another picture in the Bible which enables one to locate the people of good will is that concerning Noah and his family. In Noah's day the peoples of earth had become extremely wicked, and Jehovah announced to Noah his purpose to destroy the creatures of earth. God commanded Noah to build an ark, which would furnish a place of safety for Noah and his family during the time of the great deluge. (Genesis 6:1-17) That great destruction which came upon the earth at the flood prophetically foretold the destruction of the Devil's wicked organization that rules the earth at the present time. (Matthew 24:37-39; Luke 17:26, 27) The ark that Noah builded was a picture of the only place of safety for those who serve God, to wit, God's organization. The wickedness in the earth in Noah's day was the result of Satan and his wicked angels' deceiving and defrauding other creatures, which matter is more fully discussed and explained in the booklet *Angels.*

Religion has been the chief means employed by the Devil to deceive the people, and mention is made of religious organizations in order that the truth now due to be understood may be appreciated by those who love righteousness.

Every religious organization that has existed, beginning with Nimrod (Genesis 10:8-10), Satan has overreached and used for his purpose. The most glaring example of this is the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. Parading under the name of God and of Christ, that organization is used by Satan to deceive millions of people who have desired to do right but who are kept in ignorance of what is Jehovah's purpose. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy is the strongest visible foe on earth of Jehovah's witnesses and that organization is desperately fighting to keep the people in ignorance of the truth. This is conclusive proof that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy is Satan's organization, into which he has drawn and entrapped many good persons whom he desires to hold under restraint and away from God. In like manner Satan has held many persons in the Protestant churches under the control of their clergymen. It was even so in Noah's day that Satan entrapped the "sons of God". (Genesis 6:1, 2) The fact that the clergy have joined hands with the political and financial interests of the world, all of which is under Satan, is proof conclusive that Satan has entrapped them and is using them for his purposes. Both the Catholics and the Protestants preach to the people that their dead friends are alive and conscious either in purgatory or in torment. Such is in substance Satan's first lie spoken to man. (Genesis 3:4; John 8:44) Many good people are induced to believe that their friends who have died are suffering and in purgatory and may now be aided by prayers said in their behalf by clergymen. All of such fraudulent practice originated with Satan and is carried on by him and his host of wicked

ones. Now Satan knows that his time is very short until the great fight at Armageddon takes place, and he hastens to drive all men into spiritism or devilism and therefore against God; and for that reason at the present time there is a great turning to spiritism and spirit mediums throughout the land. All who follow the lead of Satan and his wicked allies will die at Armageddon.

PARAMOUNT TRUTH

What truth stands out as of paramount importance to all who wish to have and to hold the favor of Jehovah God? It is this: that there is but one place of safety, and that is to be in and to abide in the organization of Jehovah God. "Be still, and know that I am God: I will be exalted among the nations, I will be exalted in the earth. Jehovah of hosts is with us; the God of Jacob is our refuge." (Psalm 46:10, 11, *A.R.V.*) Everything in opposition to Jehovah God will ultimately be destroyed. Some examples follow.

Lucifer knew that Jehovah is the Almighty God and that he, Lucifer, was duty-bound to obey God. He was in God's organization and willingly forsook it, setting himself up in opposition to God, and took away with him a host of angels who were under him. Such leaving of the organization of God means their destruction. Jehovah has been longsuffering toward them in this, that he has permitted Satan and his wicked host to continue in existence and to exhibit their wickedness until God's due time to execute them. What God has prominently set out in his Word con-

cerning this wicked crowd serves as a strong warning to all intelligent creation.

Any creature once in God's organization and who treats his privilege carelessly and indifferently opens himself to the subtle attack of the enemy. Yielding to the enemy's influence and then turning away from God's organization and thereafter willfully opposing the same means that creature's certain destruction. Willful sin is knowingly violating God's law. Such is wickedness, and all the wicked God will destroy. —Psalm 145:20.

Saul is another example of those once in God's organization and who fail. (1 Samuel 9:15-17; 15:22-26) Judas is another example of those once in God's organization who become willful, fall to the wiles of the Devil, and then willfully turn away and oppose God, and whose destruction is certain. Such is the fate that comes to the "man of sin" or "son of perdition". (2 Thessalonians 2:3-9) These were once in the truth, in God's favor, and in his organization, and because of selfishness turn away from God and suffer destruction. Concerning such the apostle Peter says: "For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world, through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them." (2 Peter 2:20, 21) Israel as a nation was God's typical organization and in his favor and had his protection, but that nation fell away to the Devil and suffered destruction. Likewise "Chris-

tendom", or "organized Christianity", began with the avowed purpose of serving God, but its leaders have turned away from God and Christ and have joined hands with the Devil's organization and must suffer destruction at Armageddon.

SAFETY

Where is safety to be found? And who are they that find such place of certain safety? The destruction of the world in Noah's day by the flood foreshadowed the destruction of the present world at Armageddon. Because Noah devoted himself to Jehovah, maintained his integrity toward God and continued faithful, he was righteous in the sight of Jehovah. At the direction of God Noah built the ark, which served as a place of safety and preservation of Noah and those associated with him. That foreshadowed that the only place of safety during the greatest tribulation of all time is to be found in Jehovah's organization. The ark which Noah built at the command of God is therefore a picture of Jehovah's organization, and symbolically says to all intelligent creatures: "Jehovah's organization is the only place of safety."

The flood brought great tribulation upon the world. Armageddon will bring the greatest tribulation. (Matthew 24:21, 22) In the tribulation of Armageddon the opposers of God will find no way of escape, hence no place of safety. (Jeremiah 25:33-35) The fact that they call themselves "Christians" or by the name of Christ and God will furnish them no place of safety. Since the days of Enos men have been hypocritically calling themselves by the name of God, all of which is a mockery. (Genesis 4:26, *margin*) God cannot be

mocked with impunity. (Galatians 6:7) All who oppose Jehovah's witnesses in their giving testimony concerning the kingdom of God will be destroyed, and that definitely includes the "man of sin", "the son of perdition." The Nephilim (Genesis 6:4, *A.R.V.*), being those who rebelled with Satan, shall be destroyed with Satan at the battle of the great day of God Almighty. (See *Vindication,* Book Two, page 311.) "The sons of God" who became disobedient and left God's organization in the days of Noah have been imprisoned for a long time. (1 Peter 3:19, 20) They are yet alive, and it seems that their punishment may end approximately at Armageddon. Such of that company as turn to righteousness may be saved and recovered.

JONADAB COMPANY

God's witness Noah, the "preacher of righteousness", foreshadowed the faithful remnant now on the earth. Those persons with Noah in the ark foreshadowed the Jonadab company now on the earth who associate themselves with God's organization. These have the promise that, performing the conditions named, they may be hid in the day of Jehovah's anger. (Zephaniah 2:3) The conditions are that they attach themselves to the Lord's organization, and they must remain there steadfastly serving God, working in harmony with Jehovah's witnesses, and refusing to compromise with the world. Any attempt to remain in the organization or "chariot" of the Lord and at the same time to support the wicked world, even with the unwise desire of lifting up the world, will meet with disaster. Jehovah's organization is the only place of safety, and one who once avails him-

self of that safety and then voluntarily leaves the same is certain of destruction. Those who are of the Jonadab company must continue to faithfully study God's purposes as embraced in his Word; and hence the publication of the Lord's Word is for their benefit. They must show their love for God by being diligent in keeping his commandments. For the benefit of the temple company, and also for the benefit of those who join themselves to God's "chariot", the Lord has now pulled back the curtains and permits his light to shine in the faces of those who have devoted themselves to him, and gives them a view of things that must shortly come to pass, as well as the meaning of things that have come to pass in the sixty centuries gone by. The truth that stands out and is made to appear in the vision as of paramount importance to all others is this: Jehovah, the Almighty God, is the Giver of life, and he will preserve those who love and obey him and who remain steadfastly faithful to his organization, at all times manifesting an unfaltering and unbreakable love for Jehovah. The crucial test upon all intelligent creation is here. Let all such take warning and beware. "Jehovah is in his holy temple: let all the earth keep silence before him."—Habakkuk 2:20, *A.R.V.*

Those who will learn the right way must refuse to follow the teachings of men. Jehovah God and Christ Jesus are the true teachers of all those who love righteousness and who desire to know the truth. (Isaiah 30:20) Selfish men who assume to teach doctrines pleasing to themselves have fallen under the subtle and seductive influence of Satan, and thereby they are induced to substitute their own doctrines of specu-

lation and falsehood for the truth of God's Word. By this means many sincere people are deceived. Anyone who would receive the riches of Jehovah God must gain a knowledge of the truth, and this can be gained only by a careful study of God's Word and the helps which he has provided to understand the same. It is the privilege and duty of all persons of good will now to so inform themselves.

CITIES OF REFUGE

Those people of good will, otherwise called "Jonadabs", will now find peculiar interest in God's gracious provision as set forth in the Scriptures concerning the "cities of refuge". Those cities of refuge specifically foretell God's refuge provided for certain ones during the time of Armageddon. Moses was a type of Christ Jesus and he first received information from Jehovah concerning the cities of refuge, and later Moses transmitted that information to the people: "And the Lord spake unto Moses, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, When ye be come over Jordan into the land of Canaan; then ye shall appoint you cities to be cities of refuge for you; that the slayer may flee thither, which killeth any person at unawares. And they shall be unto you cities for refuge from the avenger; that the manslayer die not, until he stand before the congregation in judgment."—Numbers 35:9-12.

At the command of Jehovah Moses gave that information to the Israelites shortly before they reached the land of Canaan. (Deuteronomy 1:1-3) Jehovah made provision for six cities of refuge (Numbers 35:6), the number six being symbolic of incomplete-

ness or imperfection, referring to the provision made by the Lord for men during the time of imperfect conditions on the earth. The word "refuge", as used in these texts, means a place or condition of protection or safekeeping. The killing of a human creature by another constitutes the breaking of God's everlasting covenant concerning the sanctity of life. (Genesis 9:4-16) For a man who slew his fellow man by accident or unawares God provided the cities of refuge, that the slayer might flee to such city or cities and there find protection under certain conditions and be safe from the avenger or executioner until a certain time. This would clearly indicate that it is reasonable that God would provide a place or condition of safety for those people of good will on the earth that they might be protected during the time of the world-wide destruction at Armageddon, which trouble comes upon the nations because they have broken his everlasting covenant.

The provision of the law was that these cities of refuge were for the benefit of those who should kill a person unawares. "These six cities shall be a refuge, both for the children of Israel, and for the stranger, and for the sojourner among them; that every one that killeth any person unawares may flee thither." (Numbers 35:15) What is meant by the words "every one that killeth any person unawares"? Satan's organization on the earth has willfully and deliberately broken the everlasting covenant by wantonly and cruelly killing human creatures. God by his prophet declares his purpose to destroy Satan's official organization on the earth because of the violation of the everlasting covenant. "The earth also

is defiled under the inhabitants thereof, because they have transgressed the laws, changed the ordinance, broken the everlasting covenant. Therefore hath the curse devoured the earth, and they that dwell therein are desolate; therefore the inhabitants of the earth are burned, and few men left." (Isaiah 24:5, 6) The commercial and political elements of Satan's visible organization have deliberately planned and promoted cruel wars resulting in the wholesale shedding of innocent human blood. The religious element of "Christendom", and particularly those of the clergy, have sanctified those wars and blasphemously declared them to be in harmony with God's will. All such willful slayers shall perish at Armageddon.

On the other hand there are those on the earth, and particularly in the realm of "Christendom", who have worked for and supported the commercial and political systems of oppression; who have served in the armies and navies and taken human life; have upheld the commercial and political systems that have greatly oppressed the people; have been associated with religious systems which have sanctified war and have hence been a party to the crime of breaking the everlasting covenant; and those as members of the "strong-arm squad" who have aided in the persecution of the faithful followers of Christ Jesus, and have persecuted those who serve God. During the World War many men participated in these wrongful doings, and especially in the persecution of God's people, and did so without malice and without knowledge that they were violating God's law.

The ruling elements in Israel had been guilty of just such wicked things as those described in the

foregoing paragraph, and to them Jesus said: "That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias, son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar. Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation." (Matthew 23:35, 36) The bloodguilty of the official element of the nation of Israel that connived at and oppressed and killed the servants of God in particular, and oppressed and killed the defenseless people in general, were visited by God's vengeance. That terrible punishment came upon Israel within a few years after the crucifixion of Jesus; and Peter, filled with the spirit of God, speaking of that approaching trouble, said to the Israelites: "Save yourselves from this untoward generation." —Acts 2:40.

There has been great persecution heaped upon the people of God in the land of "Christendom", and there is bloodguiltiness on the part of those who have participated in this wrongful persecution deliberately. Others have had part therein unwittingly. "Christendom," and particularly the official part thereof, lays great claim to doing the will of God, while at the same time being guilty of many flagrant crimes. The prophet of Jehovah, referring to such, says: "How is the [professed] faithful city become an harlot! it was full of judgment; righteousness lodged in it; but now murderers. Thy silver is become dross, thy wine mixed with water: thy princes are rebellious, and companions of thieves: every one loveth gifts, and followeth after rewards: they judge not the fatherless, neither doth the cause of the widow come

unto them. Therefore saith the Lord, the Lord of hosts, the mighty One of Israel, Ah, I will ease me of mine adversaries, and avenge me of mine enemies." (Isaiah 1:21-24) The clergy, and the Roman Catholic Hierarchy in particular, have connived with the big commercial and political wrongdoers in robbing and destroying the people; and the above prophecy applies to them, because such are the ones who claim to be God's kingdom. Again says Jehovah's prophet:

"For I have heard a voice as of a woman in travail, and the anguish as of her that bringeth forth her first child; the voice of the daughter of Zion, that bewaileth herself, that spreadeth her hands, saying, Woe is me now! for my soul is wearied because of murderers." (Jeremiah 4:31) "And the remnant took his servants, and entreated them spitefully, and slew them. But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city." (Matthew 22:6, 7) Among both the Jews and "Christendom" there have been those who have had no sympathy with such wrongdoing, yet by reason of circumstances have been forced into participating in and supporting these wrongdoers, to some degree at least, and are thus of the class that unwittingly or unawares are guilty of shedding blood.

Those who have unwittingly or unawares supported these wrongdoers must have some way of escape, otherwise they would fall in the great trouble in the battle of the great day of God Almighty. Jehovah in his loving-kindness has made just such a provision as is needed for their escape. Of the six cities of refuge "Moses severed three cities on this side [the] Jor-

dan toward the sunrising". (Deuteronomy 4:41-44) Joshua confirmed that selection after he had crossed the Jordan, and also appointed three cities in Canaan. (Joshua 20:7-9) The six cities were a place of refuge "for the children of Israel" and "for the stranger" and "for the sojourner", thus showing that in the fulfillment of the prophecy the place of refuge would be for those in "Christendom", and also for those associated with "Christendom" but not a part thereof, who might have need of such refuge and who desire and seek it. "That the slayer that killeth any person unawares and unwittingly may flee thither: and they shall be your refuge from the avenger of blood. These were the cities appointed for all the children of Israel, and for the stranger that sojourneth among them, that whosoever killeth any person at unawares might flee thither, and not die by the hand of the avenger of blood, until he stood before the congregation."—Joshua 20:3, 9.

If death resulted from a willful act by one using as a weapon "an instrument of iron", or by "throwing a stone", or "with an hand weapon of wood", that is, a club, the one doing the wrongful act which resulted in death was guilty of murder and must die. (Numbers 35:16-18) The murderer's blood must be shed by the avenger or revenger of blood, that being the law of God for punishment in violation of the everlasting covenant. "Whoso sheddeth man's blood, by man shall his blood be shed: for in the image of God made he man." (Genesis 9:6) "The revenger of blood himself shall slay the murderer: when he meeteth him, he shall slay him." (Numbers 35:19) But if the killing was by accident or unawares, the

manslayer might flee to the city of refuge for protection. "And they shall be unto you cities for refuge from the avenger; that the manslayer die not, until he stand before the congregation in judgment." —Numbers 35:12.

THE AVENGER

Who is "the avenger", or the one who executes vengeance antitypically upon such wrongdoers? The very language of the law of God makes "the avenger" God's official executioner. According to the Hebrew for "avenger" the execution of vengeance devolved upon one by reason of kinship.

The great kinsman of the human race by birth is Jesus, being born of the virgin Mary, and hence he was the kinsman of the Israelites. (Galatians 4:4, 5) The perfect man Jesus bought the human race with his own precious blood and is therefore the Redeemer, and as the Redeemer of man he is clothed with authority from Jehovah his Father to give life to the human race. (Romans 6:23; Isaiah 9:6, 7) He is Jehovah's great official executioner and delivers justice by repaying like with like upon the bloodguilty. "For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son; and hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man." (John 5:22, 27; Deuteronomy 19:21) Christ Jesus is the Vindicator of Jehovah's name, and the Executioner of all of God's enemies, and in this execution of vengeance he associates with him those pictured by the "six men" each of which was armed with a slaughter weapon in his hand and used it un-

FLEE TO JEHOVAH'S ORGANIZATION Page 111

[B L A N K]

der the direction of the Lord.—See Ezekiel 9:1, 2; pages 93-99; also *Vindication,* Book One, page 94.

"The revenger of blood himself shall slay the murderer, when he meeteth him." (Numbers 35:19) Jesus Christ, the great Executioner, will certainly meet or overtake all of the bloodguilty ones at Armageddon in the battle of the great day of God Almighty and will slay all such as are not in the cities of refuge. The provision of the law was, "that the manslayer die not, until he stand before the congregation in judgment." (Numbers 35:12) All other manslayers must be executed. The cities of refuge were prepared as a way of escape: "Lest the avenger of the blood pursue the slayer, while his heart is hot, and overtake him, because the way is long, and slay him; whereas he was not worthy of death, inasmuch as he hated him not in time past . . . that innocent blood be not shed in thy land, which the Lord thy God giveth thee for an inheritance, and so blood be upon thee." (Deuteronomy 19:6-10) That provision of God's law foreshadowed far greater things to come to pass after the faithful and approved remnant are taken into the covenant for the Kingdom. (Hebrews 10:1; 12:12-29) The new covenant having been inaugurated, and the faithful being taken into the covenant for the Kingdom, it would therefore follow that the antitypical cities of refuge are now set up and that these are for the benefit of those who come within the terms of God's loving provision. (Considered in detail in *Jehovah.*)

When Jehu went forth to vindicate the name of Jehovah 'his heart was hot' to accomplish the work assigned him to do. Likewise the Greater Jehu, Christ

Jesus, when sent forth to rule amongst his enemies and to vindicate Jehovah's name, "his heart is hot" within him to accomplish that great work. The gross and flagrant violation of the everlasting covenant by the shedding of human blood must now be avenged, because this is the day of the vengeance of our God and the bloodguilty ones must fall by the hand of the great Executioner. Therefore the Devil 'knoweth that his time is short' and that soon the battle of the great day of God Almighty will be fought. (Revelation 12:12) Such will result in the meting out of justice to the murderers and in the vindication of Jehovah's name. Those who have been unwittingly associated with the devilish work against mankind, and in the heaping of infamy upon the name of Jehovah, and who would now escape to the city of refuge, must hasten thereto. They must get away from the Devil's organization and take their place with the Lord God's organization and remain there. For this reason it is written: "Flee out of the midst of Babylon, and deliver every man his soul; be not cut off in her iniquity: for this is the time of the Lord's vengeance; he will render unto her a recompence. Make bright the arrows; gather the shields: the Lord hath raised up the spirit of the kings of the Medes: for his device is against Babylon, to destroy it; because it is the vengeance of the Lord, the vengeance of his temple."—Jeremiah 51:6, 11.

For centuries the whole world has been under the dominating control of the wicked one, Satan, and his cruel and wicked organization. The Executioner will completely destroy such at Armageddon. Christ Jesus, the Executioner, is at the temple of Jehovah now

for judgment, and God calls upon all the nations to keep silent before him and see and give heed to Jehovah's commandment. It is his time to make announcement of his purpose, and he gives notice and warning. The official element of Satan's visible organization has received notice and warning that this world is Satan's organization, and that it will be destroyed and that Jehovah's witnesses are appointed by him to proclaim these truths and serve such notice. A proclamation of these truths has not comforted the clergy, big business and politicians, but, on the contrary, they have refused to give heed to the notice and warning and have hardened their hearts. This is particularly true with reference to the clergy element. This official element with deliberation, premeditation and malice aforethought continues to oppress God's people and to persecute them for making proclamation of the truth. Furthermore, they do injury to and kill those who are devoted to the Lord. They do injury to the people of good will by constantly trying to keep away from them the truth.

The official elements of Satan's organization, visible and invisible, are in a conspiracy to destroy the anointed of the Lord and to prevent the proclamation of the truth concerning Jehovah, his name and his purpose. (Psalm 83: 1-5) Like Ahab and Jezebel, who suborned witnesses to have Naboth killed and his property stolen, the clergy and their allies now induce others to swear falsely against the witnesses of Jehovah and cause them to suffer, and thus they show malice and cruel hatred. These are such as lie in wait to slay those against whom they hold malice. Concerning such the law of God is: "But if he thrust him of

hatred, or hurl at him by laying of wait, that he die; or in enmity smite him with his hand, that he die; he that smote him shall surely be put to death; for he is a murderer: the revenger of blood shall slay the murderer, when he meeteth him."–Numbers 35:20, 21.

Not later than Armageddon Jesus Christ, the revenger of blood, will slay the malicious clergy and their allies. It appears that such men, who have professed to serve God but who have willfully served the Devil, shall receive the severer punishment at the hands of the great Executioner. The Lord gives command to the "six men", who representatively stand for the invisible part of the organization under Christ Jesus, to go in with their weapons and slay the willful ones, and that without mercy. "And to the others he said in mine hearing, Go ye after him through the city, and smite; let not your eye spare, neither have ye pity: slay utterly old and young, both maids, and little children, and women; but come not near any man upon whom is the mark; and begin at my sanctuary. Then they began at the ancient men which were before the house." (Ezekiel 9:5, 6) The plain declaration of the Lord is that "organized religion", which has so greatly defamed his name, and those therein who have participated in the persecution of his faithful people and have defamed God's name, shall be destroyed without mercy.

Who, then, are the ones that will escape? It is the people of good will that flee into the city of refuge. They were once associated in some respect with Satan's organization, but now, by reason of learning of the wickedness thereof, and of God's loving-kindness, they seek refuge in God's organization, which

organization was pictured by the cities of refuge. They forsake Babylon, that is to say, Satan's organization, and flee unto God's organization, taking their stand on the side of Jehovah and his kingdom, and henceforth they must have no sympathy with nor give support to the wicked organization, but must remain steadfastly on the side of the Lord and be in full sympathy with his organization and the work he is doing.

ELDERS

The elders of God's organization are those who have been brought into the temple and anointed of the Lord, and who are therefore elders in fact, or mature ones in Christ. These shall not shun to declare the truth of and concerning the enemies of God; and this was foreshadowed by the declaration of God's law in Moab, to wit: "But if any man hate his neighbour, and lie in wait for him, and rise up against him, and smite him mortally that he die, and fleeth into one of these cities: then the elders of his city shall send and fetch him thence, and deliver him into the hand of the avenger of blood, that he may die. Thine eye shall not pity him, but thou shalt put away the guilt of innocent blood from Israel, that it may go well with thee."—Deuteronomy 19:11-13.

The faithful remnant of God's organization, and who hence are elders, must not compromise in any way with the deliberate manslayers or persecutors who are of Satan's organization or try to shield them, nor must they have any sympathy for them as against the execution of God's vengeance upon them. They not only must be separate themselves from that wicked

organization, but must be in full heart accord with God's determination to execute his vengeance upon them. They must be consistent and pray God that his declared purpose to destroy the wicked shall be carried into operation. Thus they will show their full sympathy with and heart devotion to Jehovah and to his purposes. These faithful ones, therefore, must continue to boldly declare the vengeance of our God, because this is a part of the commission given to his anointed ones.—Isaiah 61:1, 2.

Throughout the land of "Christendom" there are millions of people of good and honest heart who do not wish to share the guilt of blood innocently shed. Ignorantly, hence unwittingly and unawares, they have been drawn into Satan's trap and caused to commit many wrongful deeds against others. In God's law ignorance thereof is an excuse when one turns his heart to righteousness. In order for these to escape, however, they must show their devotion to God and his kingdom upon coming to a knowledge of his provision for the human race. Like the "elders of his [the manslayer's] city", they must not safeguard the guilty ones, but must be in accord with the Greater Jehu; and when, like Jehu, He calls for the heads of the sons of the antitypical Ahab crowd they must follow the example of the rulers and elders and deliver up the heads. (2 Kings 10:1-7) This does not mean that they participate in the execution of any creature, but it does mean they must not hesitate to declare the truth when the opportunity comes, and must not refrain from doing so in order to secrete someone else. The clergy, especially the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, howl and complain that Jehovah's

witnesses attack them. Such is wholly untrue. God lays the obligation upon his people to declare the truth, that others may know of God's purposes. It is the truth that exposes the wicked, and the truth is declared for the benefit of those who wish to do right.

The great Judge, Christ Jesus, is upon his throne at the temple and is dividing the people, and those who desire to be in harmony with God and righteousness must without equivocation or compromise take their stand on the side of the Lord and let it be known that they are for God and his righteous government at all times. The obligation is now upon Jehovah's witnesses to instruct the Jonadab class in order that those of good will may act intelligently. Those persons of good will and honest heart have been kept in blindness by Satan and his agents, particularly the clergy, and until they heard the truth about the Lord and his kingdom; and thus they have unwittingly supported the unholy crowd and committed acts of violence to those who are devoted to Jehovah and his kingdom, as well as to others.

Since the coming of the Lord Jesus to the temple and the building up of Zion those found faithful and brought into the covenant for the Kingdom form a part of God's organization. It was after the covenant of faithfulness, which was made in Moab, that the cities of refuge were set up; and this shows that it was after the taking of the faithful sons of God into the covenant for the Kingdom that the cities of refuge antitypically are set up or, rather, made to apply. Prior to the taking of the faithful remnant into the covenant for the Kingdom there were, and since then

have been, and are yet, people of good will who have unwittingly or unawares violated the everlasting covenant. The period of sacrifice for the taking out of a people for Jehovah's name must end with the completion of Zion; but what provision is made for those of good will who now devote themselves to Jehovah God? They are in the world ruled by Satan, and they have no sympathy with his wicked rule, and have separated themselves therefrom. They desire to serve God and to do his will. It is important just now to understand what is Jehovah's purpose concerning them and what is the obligation laid upon the faithful remnant in connection with the Jonadabs.

Men went to the World War and violated the everlasting covenant by shedding human blood, but many of them did so because they were forced by the ruling powers of Satan's organization to do so, and they did it in ignorance of the fact that they were violating the everlasting covenant. There they saw the duplicity and hypocrisy of the clergy, who claimed to be followers of Christ Jesus, and servants of God, and yet who not only participated in the war but viciously urged upon others the killing of human creatures. Such men were shocked by the conduct of the clergy, and when they returned from the war and heard of the truth of God's provision for the human race through Christ Jesus they had a desire to know and to do the will of God. They hated wickedness, and with an honest heart sought to find the right way. Others have supported the wicked and oppressive organization which governs this world and which has done much violence to men, including the witnesses of Jehovah. Others have been connected

with religious organizations that have cruelly persecuted God's faithful people in a manner similar to that wrong committed by Saul of Tarsus. (Acts 8:1-3; 9:1-22) Others as members of the police force, or strong-arm squad, have reluctantly done the bidding of the clergy and have committed acts of violence against God's anointed people, but, learning the truth, they have shown anxiety to take a different and right course. Those who thus honestly change their course of action and seek the Lord in his appointed way find him.

The antitype of the cities of refuge is Jehovah's organization, and he has made provision for the protection of those who place themselves fully on the side of his organization and who have not willfully and maliciously violated the everlasting covenant. "Willfully and maliciously" means to knowingly do a wrongful deed with a wicked motive in the heart and in utter disregard of the rights of others. For instance, clergymen have connived at the persecution and killing of Jehovah's witnesses and have done so knowing that such men and women were harmless and were proclaiming the Word of God. The motive of such clergymen was malicious because they desired to get such witnesses out of their way. Others have assisted them in wrongdoing but have done so ignorantly and without malice. God's law concerning such was stated to the Israelites, and antitypically applies to others now, to wit: "These six cities shall be a refuge, both for the children of Israel, and for the stranger, and for the sojourner among them; that every one that killeth any person unawares may flee thither."—Numbers 35:15.

Now, since the coming of the Lord to the temple, those in "Christendom" and who form no part of "Christendom", but who are of good will and have a desire to serve God and his righteous government, must find a haven or place of refuge in the city (that is to say, the organization) that is wholly devoted to Jehovah and his service. Jehovah has laid upon his witnesses at the present time an obligation concerning this class who desire to do right, and that obligation cannot be side-stepped or ignored. That obligation is to carry to the people of good will the message of the kingdom informing them of God's provision made for those who diligently seek to know him and to serve him. By and through his great High Priest, Christ Jesus, Jehovah commands that his witnesses must preach this gospel of the kingdom before the final end comes. They must give notice and warning to the people, that those of good will may act intelligently and in order that they may bear their own responsibility before God.

The cities of refuge were occupied by those of the tribe of Levi: "And when he that doth flee unto one of those cities shall stand at the entering of the gate of the city, and shall declare his cause in the ears of the elders of that city, they shall take him into the city unto them, and give him a place, that he may dwell among them. And if the avenger of blood pursue after him, then they shall not deliver the slayer up into his hand; because he smote his neighbour unwittingly, and hated him not beforetime." (Joshua 20:4, 5) It was the duty of the Levites in the cities of refuge to give information, aid and comfort to those seeking refuge. Likewise it is the duty of the anti-

typical Levites to give information, aid and comfort to those who now seek the Lord's organization. This they must do by giving them a mark in the forehead, that is to say, giving them intelligent information as to what they must do in order to have the Lord's favor. God through his prophet Ezekiel especially commands that the priestly class must go through the land and thus put a "tav" (*Hebrew*) or mark upon the foreheads of those who are seeking the way of the Lord. It is this class of people who are thus marked, and who thereafter come into and abide in the city, that are spared and taken through the great tribulation.—Ezekiel 9:6; Zephaniah 2:3.

That the people of God's remnant have a special obligation toward those of good will thus seeking refuge from the Avenger and who committed wrong unwittingly, it is written: "Then the congregation shall judge between the slayer and the revenger of blood according to these judgments: and the congregation shall deliver the slayer out of the hand of the revenger of blood, and the congregation shall restore him to the city of his refuge, whither he was fled: and he shall abide in it unto the death of the high priest, which was anointed with the holy oil."—Numbers 35:22-25.

Therefore those who refuse or fail to go among the people and call upon them at their homes and give them the life-giving kingdom message from the Lord, and those who hinder, oppose and discourage the ones who are thus obeying the Lord in carrying the message of truth to the people, show an unloving and unjust spirit that would hand over the Jonadab class without mercy to be executed by the Executioner at

Armageddon. Failure or refusal to assume and carry out this responsibility will not go unnoticed by the Lord, because he has enlightened his anointed ones and they must obey. "If thou forbear to deliver them that are drawn unto death, and those that are ready to be slain; if thou sayest, Behold, we knew it not; doth not he that pondereth the heart consider it? and he that keepeth thy soul, doth not he know it? and shall not he render to every man according to his works?" (Proverbs 24:11, 12) "A true witness delivereth souls: but a deceitful witness speaketh lies." —Proverbs 14:25.

SEEKING REFUGE

The fact that the provision for refuge was made "for the stranger" as well as for Israelites shows that Jehovah's loving-kindness has made provision for those outside of his organization that they may seek and find refuge by associating themselves with his organization, that is, be wholly devoted to him; but those who will avail themselves of such refuge must first be informed about it and then comply with the rules the Lord has laid down for their guidance. God's law required that if one committed manslaughter accidentally or unawares or unwittingly, and if the slayer was not an enemy of the slain person, then the congregation should judge between the slayer and the avenger or next of kin; that is, they should try the case and determine whether or not the slayer might flee to their city and find refuge there. "And he shall dwell in that city, until he stand before the congregation for judgment, and until the death of the high priest that shall be in those days: then

shall the slayer return, and come unto his own city, and unto his own house, unto the city from whence he fled."—Joshua 20:6.

If the decision was that the slaying was without malice and the crime accidental or unwittingly committed, then the slayer should find protection in the city of refuge, and must remain there until the death of the high priest. Then though the congregation found the slayer not guilty, and entitled to the protection of the city of refuge, that was not sufficient for him to go free, but he must go into the city of refuge and remain there until a change took place in the office of the high priest. At the death of the high priest the slayer might return with safety to his own place or residence. This would clearly seem to teach that the Jonadab class, having sought and found refuge with God's organization, must remain in the chariot or organization of the Lord with the Greater Jehu, and must continue in heart sympathy and harmony with the Lord and his organization and must prove this proper heart condition by co-operating with Jehovah's witnesses until the office of the high priest class yet on the earth be finished. Thus the people of good will must do if they would have their lives spared during the battle of the great day of God Almighty and be of the class that shall live and often mentioned as the "millions now living shall never die".

The Lord Jesus Christ is the great High Priest, and the faithful members of his royal house are counted in as members of that priesthood. (Revelation 1:6; 20:6; 1 Peter 2:5-9) The anointing oil of God's spirit has been specially poured out on all of Jeho-

vah's witnesses in these latter days; and the remnant being thus anointed, they are made members of the "royal priesthood".

This anointing or 'pouring out of the spirit upon all flesh' has taken place since the coming of the Lord Jesus to the temple, and since then the "young men" who are of the priesthood have had a clearer vision of Jehovah's purposes concerning them. (Joel 2:28, 29) These are the days in which the Jonadab class has come into existence, and those who are of the Jonadab company have fled to Jehovah's organization. As long, then, as the anointed members of the royal priesthood, meaning the anointed remnant, live on the earth and continue to preach "this gospel of the kingdom", the Jonadab company must keep in company and in harmony with Jehovah's anointed and aid them in their work; otherwise the great Avenger will overtake them.

It must be kept in mind that the things pertaining to the law which God gave to the Israelites were shadows of greater things to come. (Hebrews 10:1) The law concerning the manslayer who did such slaying unwittingly or unawares provided for his protection only within the bounds of the city of refuge, and the bounds or borders of the city were the suburbs which surrounded the city. (Numbers 35:2-5) If the avenger should find the slayer out of bounds of the city of refuge, then he could slay him with impunity and the avenger would be entirely free from wrongdoing. "But if the slayer shall at any time come without the border of the city of his refuge, whither he was fled; and the revenger of blood find him without the borders of the city of his refuge, and the revenger of

blood kill the slayer; he shall not be guilty of blood." —Numbers 35:26, 27.

This prophetic provision of the law finds its fulfillment in the present day. Jehovah has graciously provided for those of good will who now seek him, and who are not of the spiritual class. If after receiving these good things from the hand of the Lord any man is found exercising too much personal liberty, that is to say, not keeping within the bounds of Jehovah's merciful provision made for him at the present time; not taking into consideration that he does not yet possess the right to life, but treats the favor of Jehovah lightly, indifferently, or ignores it, he loses the protection which Jehovah has provided for him. He must continue to appreciate the certainty and nearness of Armageddon, at which time Satan's organization will be destroyed, and also the fact that soon the priestly company shall pass from the earth, and that then the Jonadab class may receive the gift of life through Jesus Christ if they continue steadfast on the side of the Lord and righteousness. Having once taken his stand on the side of the Lord and tasted the good things of God's arrangement, and learning of God's gracious provision for those of the Jonadab class, he cannot again turn to the beggarly elements of Satan's organization and at the same time have the Lord's protection.—Ezekiel 18:24, 26.

Those who have once sought and found refuge on the Lord's side and who turn again to unrighteousness will die justly. The executioner of Jehovah is entirely justified in slaying such, and his hands are clean, because he carries out Jehovah's orders. No one

in the universe can ever justly say that the slaughter at Armageddon will be barbarous, unjustified or unrighteous. On the contrary, it will meet the requirements of God's law concerning the sacredness of human life. The value and importance of the warning to the people now is emphasized by the words of Jehovah announced through his prophet: "Then whosoever heareth the sound of the trumpet, and taketh not warning; if the sword come, and take him away, his blood shall be upon his own head. He heard the sound of the trumpet, and took not warning, his blood shall be upon him: but he that taketh warning shall deliver his soul. When I shall say to the righteous, that he shall surely live; if he trust to his own righteousness, and commit iniquity, all his righteousnesses shall not be remembered; but for his iniquity that he hath committed, he shall die for it."—Ezekiel 33:4, 5, 13.

"SHEEP"

The Lord is pleased to use figures of speech which he applies to those who hear and obey his commandments. One of such figures of speech is that of sheep, an animal that is docile and obedient. The Lord sometimes spoke parables to illustrate the gathering to himself of those that love and obey Jehovah and Christ Jesus. The shepherd and the sheep were used by him in this way. It was in the land of Palestine (where Jesus taught) that the custom was for the shepherd to go before the sheep and the sheep, knowing his voice, obeyed and followed him. Speaking of the shepherd Jesus said: "And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him; for they know his voice."—John 10:4.

Jehovah is the great Shepherd who leads, shields and protects those who are devoted to him. "Jehovah is my shepherd; I shall not want." (Psalm 23:1, *A.R.V.*) Christ Jesus, always obedient to the Father's will, is likened in the Scriptures unto the sheep, uncomplaining and fully submissive to the Most High. —Isaiah 53:7.

When Jehovah led the Israelites, his typical people, out of Egypt, 'he made his own go forth like sheep, and guided them in the wilderness like a flock.' (Psalm 78:52) Those obedient ones of the Israelites were typical of God's chosen people, who ultimately become members of the royal house. (Psalm 95:7) Jehovah has made his beloved Son Jesus the Head, the Leader and the Good Shepherd of all those who become members of his royal house. The Lord Jesus 'sends forth as sheep' men that are fully obedient to his call and commandments. These go forth amidst others that are likened unto wolves, and Christ Jesus protects them. (Matthew 10:16) Jesus, the Good Shepherd, gave his life for those who become his true followers. Jesus himself is the door or way or entrance for the sheep into life, and this he illustrates by these words: "I am the door; by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture. The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly. I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep. I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine."—John 10:9-11, 14.

Jesus is referring to those who are called to follow in his footsteps and who prove true and faithful, when he uses these words: "My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: and I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand." (John 10:27, 28) The Lord by this illustration shows his watch-care over those persons who devote themselves to God's cause and follow the Master, Christ Jesus, the Good Shepherd.

In the world there are organized systems called "churches", and in these organizations men teach, and for many years have taught, that all the professed followers of Christ Jesus go to heaven at death and that all others go to purgatory or eternal torment, and that there is no hope for life for anyone except those who ultimately reach the heavenly realm. Such teaching or conclusion is entirely out of harmony with the Word of God. Jesus first described his faithful followers, such as his apostles, and likens them unto sheep, and then, in order to distinguish those who go to heaven from others of the human race that love and obey God, Jesus said: "And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd."—John 10:16.

The ones here mentioned as "other sheep" are those who in other parts of the Scriptures are identified as Jonadabs, who in due time are brought into God's organization under the leadership of Christ Jesus, the Good Shepherd; and it is these obedient ones to whom Jesus referred when he said: "Verily, verily, I say

"LITTLE FLOCK" AND THE "OTHER SHEEP"
Page 132

[B L A N K]

unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death." (John 8:51) "And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this?" —John 11:26.

The Scriptures definitely show that those sheep who will be members of the royal house in God's heavenly organization will inherit, with Christ Jesus, the riches of his glory, and that such are limited to the 144,000. The Scriptures also clearly show that there will be multitudes that will live for ever on the earth and be the recipients of boundless riches Jehovah has provided for them in his kingdom under Christ. Those now on the earth are permitted to live in a time when Jehovah God is making clear the meaning of his Word and he is revealing to those who search for the truth his treasure house of great riches.

The foregoing Scriptures identify the class of persons of good will toward Jehovah, and which are known in the Scriptures as Jonadabs; as those that receive a mark in their foreheads; as those that flee to the city of refuge and there find safety; as those foreshadowed by Noah's family, who found safety in the ark; and as "other sheep", which the Lord ultimately brings into his organization and makes them to inherit blessings upon the earth. Other prophetic pictures are disclosed by the Scriptures identifying this same class under different names. It is for these obedient ones that God has in reservation untold riches. Every sane person will be anxious now to know how he can have a part in those great riches. It is now your opportunity to learn these satisfying truths.

CHAPTER III

HOW TO BECOME RICH

JEHOVAH is the source of all riches, and Christ Jesus is Jehovah's dispenser of such riches. "The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand." (John 3:35) Only those who come to a knowledge of Jehovah and who then obey will receive the riches which the Lord dispenses. For this reason Jesus said: "And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent."—John 17:3.

Many persons having a desire for the blessings of life but who have been misled and greatly confused are heard to say something like this: "I believe that if I do what I can see to be right I will be saved." Such conclusion or belief is entirely erroneous. There are not many ways, but only one way, by which man can obtain the blessings of riches, and that one way God has appointed. How may man find that one and right way?

In the Scriptures these words are written for the benefit of man who is searching to find the right way, to wit: "Without faith it is impossible to please [God]: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him."—Hebrews 11:6.

Properly, and therefore Scripturally defined, "faith" means: To have a knowledge of Jehovah's purpose as expressed in his Word, the Scriptures, and

then to confidently rely upon the Word of God. Faith must be based upon what is known to be true, and we have absolute assurance that the Word of God is true. Concerning the Scriptures, the Word of God, Jesus said: "Thy word is truth." The Scriptures define faith in harmony with the foregoing in these words: "But faith is a basis of things hoped for, a conviction of things unseen." (Hebrews 11:1, *Diaglott*) "Now faith is a well-grounded assurance of that for which we hope, and a conviction of the reality of things which we do not see."—Hebrews 11:1, *Weymouth.*

A man cannot have confident assurance of anything which is based merely upon his mental conception, and that without any proof emanating from the truthful source. Anything not based upon absolute truth is merely a guess. No sane person would want to let his eternal welfare rest merely upon a guess.

Your desire is to receive the blessing of the Lord that makes rich and with which there is no sorrow added. In order to have hope of receiving such blessing there must be a good reason to expect that blessing, and that good reason must be based upon competent evidence or proof that comes from an absolutely reliable source. The basis or ground upon which that hope rests is faith. Before one can "believe", within the meaning of the Scriptures, or have faith, he must receive some knowledge; therefore it is written in the Scriptures: "So then faith cometh by hearing [the message of truth], and hearing [the message of truth] by the word of God [which is the truth]." (Romans 10:17) Knowing that the message in God's Word is true, you can confidently rely upon that message,

which furnishes the true and convincing evidence of the things for which you hope. Such is the reason for your having hope of obtaining the blessings that God has in store for those who love and serve him.

Faith cannot be based upon the information coming from man, because all men are imperfect and you cannot be certain that any man is speaking the exact truth. Regardless of the honesty of the man, his opinion is valueless unless that opinion is supported by the Word of God. If you rely upon what an imperfect man says, that is credulity and not faith. Any hope based upon credulity is certain to be dashed to pieces. In order to have faith you must hear the truth, know that it is the truth, and then confidently rely upon that message of truth. If then that message of truth is faithfully obeyed, you can never fail. To rely upon what you hear from God's Word of truth is to believe on Jehovah and his purposes as disclosed in the Scriptures. Note the argument set forth in the Scriptures upon this point: "For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved. How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher [one who proclaims God's Word of truth as written in the Scriptures]? And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!"—Romans 10:13-15.

A man who harangues the people and states his conclusions or the conclusions or opinions of other men is not a "preacher" within the meaning of the Scrip-

tures. A more appropriate name for him would be "windjammer". The man who appeals to the emotions or passions of others is not preaching the truth, because one can receive the truth only by reasoning calmly and soberly; therefore God says to the man who is seeking truth: "Come now, and let us reason together, saith the Lord: Though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool." (Isaiah 1:18) To reason with the Lord means to soberly, prayerfully and studiously consider his Word.

For this reason the Lord sends forth his witnesses to inform other persons of his purpose; and these witnesses proclaim not their ideas, but call attention to the message of truth as found in the Scriptures. The one receiving that information from the Scriptures has the privilege of believing on the Lord God and the Lord Jesus Christ, and if he does believe he will prove his faith by acting in harmony therewith. To rely upon the Word of God, which constitutes one element of faith, one must deport himself in harmony with the Word of God.

Men form an organization which is called "a church", and they put forth doctrines or opinions and call them "creeds", and the people are urged to believe such doctrines or teachings and to follow the formalism of that creed. To believe in the doctrines of men or that which is promulgated by the organization of men does not constitute faith at all. Jehovah God and Christ Jesus are the Teachers, and the true teachings or doctrines are set forth in the Scriptures; and the Scriptures are given as a perfect guide for man who desires to learn of and

pursue a course of righteousness. (2 Timothy 3:16, 17) It follows, then, that you cannot please God by believing and relying upon what you conceive in your own mind, nor can you please God by believing or relying upon what is conceived in another man's mind and taught by him. You can please God only by knowing his Word and relying upon and obeying his Word.

For that reason some knowledge of the Scriptures is absolutely essential to faith. The first essential is to 'believe that God is', that is to say, that he exists, and that he is the one from whom all blessings proceed. (Hebrews 11:6) God is the Eternal One, who created the heavens and the earth and all the things that are therein. As the Scriptures declare, he is the great "I AM", which means that he is not merely the one that was, that came into existence, and is now; but the "I AM" means that he has existed eternally. (Exodus 3:14) "LORD, thou hast been our dwelling-place in all generations. Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever thou hadst formed the earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting, thou art God." (Psalm 90:1, 2) In the prophecy of the Scriptures it is written: "Thus saith God the LORD, he that created the heavens, and stretched them out; he that spread forth the earth, and that which cometh out of it; he that giveth breath unto the people upon it, and spirit to them that walk therein." —Isaiah 42:5.

By and through his Word, the Bible or Holy Scriptures, God reveals himself to his creatures and discloses thereby his purposes concerning his creatures. The meanings of his names or titles are very significant. His name *The God* means The Mighty One,

the Creator of all things. His name *Jehovah* means his purpose toward his creatures. His name *The Almighty God* signifies that his power is without limitation. His name *The Most High* means that he is the Supreme One and there is none before him. His name *Father* means that he is the Life-giver. He is the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, because Christ Jesus, the Son, was Jehovah's 'beginning of creation' and from Jehovah he received life. (Revelation 3:14) He has appointed his beloved Son, Christ Jesus, to be his Chief Executive Officer and the Savior of mankind.

Having received some knowledge of Jehovah God and his beloved Son Christ Jesus, you desire to come to Him and to learn his purpose. Hereinbefore are set out the scriptures referring to those who are taken out of the world as a people for Jehovah's name. The same scriptures up to a certain point apply to all who will ever get life. Because these scriptures apply to men of good will, otherwise called "Jonadabs", attention is here again called to them. Jesus, Jehovah's spokesman, authoritatively states: "I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no man cometh unto the Father, but by me." (John 14:6) This knowledge a man must have before he can have faith, and then he must rely upon that knowledge. God has provided for salvation and blessings of humankind by and through Christ Jesus, and there is no other possible way for man to obtain such blessings. "Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved." (Acts 4:12) Then Jesus says: "No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him." (John 6:44) It is essen-

tial for you to understand how one can come into harmony with Jehovah God. The Scriptures answer, that God draws man to Christ Jesus by affording that man the opportunity to learn of and to know that Jesus is God's provided way for salvation and blessing of man and that there is no other way. When one learns that there is no other way of obtaining life and attending blessings save through Christ Jesus, then the sane person would be drawn to him. No blessing could be lasting unless a man lives for ever, and this blessing comes from Jehovah through Christ Jesus; as it is written: 'Life is the gift of God [to man] through our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.' (Romans 6:23) For that reason Jesus said: 'This is life eternal, to know God and Christ.'—John 17:3.

Have you reached the point now that you believe that Jehovah is the true and almighty God, and that Christ Jesus is his beloved Son; that by the will of God Jesus died upon the tree and thereby provided the redemptive or ransom price for you, and that therefore Jesus Christ is the Savior of man and that only by and through him can man have everlasting life? Are you convinced that these truths set forth in the Bible are entirely reliable, and that you can with certainty and confidence rely upon them? If you answer Yes, you will prove that you do so believe by taking the course which the Scriptures point out that one must take in order to be in line to receive the blessings of riches which Jehovah has provided for humankind. What, then, is the next step in order?

CONSECRATION

You are a person of good will toward God and therefore it is your honest and sincere desire to do the will of God. Having full confidence in Jehovah God, you know his will concerning you is right. The perfect man Jesus said: "Lo, I come . . . to do thy will, O God." (Hebrews 10:7) "I delight to do thy will, O my God; yea, thy law is within my heart." (Psalm 40:7, 8) These words mean that Jesus fully relied upon Jehovah God and gladly agreed to do the will of God, his Father. Such agreement to do God's will constitutes consecration. Every person who desires to receive God's favor must take exactly that same course. He must believe on the Lord Jesus Christ as his Redeemer and Savior, and thus relying upon God and Christ Jesus that person must covenant or agree to do the will of God. What is God's will toward that person is set forth in the Scriptures; therefore it becomes necessary for such person to study the Scriptures and find out the will of God concerning him.

It is necessary to give some evidence that you have agreed to do the will of God, and by such proof produced by you others may know that you have taken your stand on the side of God and Christ Jesus. Relating to this it is written in the Scriptures: "If thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation."—Romans 10:9, 10.

An outward or public declaration or confession that you have covenanted or agreed to do the will of God is essential on your part to show that you really have, and that you are exercising, faith in God and his provisions for you. Many persons claim to be Christians, as distinguished from heathen, but almost all of them are ashamed to confess the name of God and Christ Jesus, and that shame is of itself proof that such have not agreed to do the will of God. "For the scripture saith, Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed." (Romans 10:11) Why should one be ashamed to confess openly before others the name of the only one by whom all his blessings must be received?

BAPTISM

Is it necessary for one who today professes to be a Jonadab or person of good will toward God to be baptized or immersed in water? Such is proper and a necessary act of obedience on the part of one who has consecrated himself, that is, agreed or covenanted with God to do the will of God. It is an outward confession that the one being baptized in water has agreed to do God's will. Baptism or immersion in water does not wash away or cleanse one from sin that resulted to man by reason of Adam's disobedience. It is the sacrifice or lifeblood of Jesus that cleanses from sin. (1 John 1:7-9) There is no means of cleansing from sin or the remission of sin except by the shedding of the blood of Christ Jesus. (Hebrews 9:22) It is only those who have and exercise faith in the shed blood of Christ Jesus that have their sins remitted. Baptism in water is an outward evidence that the one so

baptized has entered into a covenant with God to do his will, and this is evidence of faith in the shed blood of Christ Jesus. Submitting to be immersed in water is an act of obedience illustrating how one has fully put himself in the hands of the Lord, and therefore baptism is necessary and proper to be performed by all who have agreed to do the will of God.

The perfect man Jesus presented himself before John at the river Jordan and requested to be baptized in the river. John declined to baptize him because John knew that Jesus was not a sinful man and manifestly John understood that water baptism was solely for the benefit of those who were sinful. Jesus did not explain to John the reason, but to John's objection he replied: "Suffer [permit] it to be so now; for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness." (Matthew 3:15) Jesus was there perfect, pure, holy and without sin. His water baptism or immersion was a testimony before others that he had fully agreed to do the will of his Father, Jehovah.

It is written that immediately following the baptism of Jesus in the water those standing by heard a voice of approval from on high: "And, lo, a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased." (Matthew 3:17) Thus God manifested his pleasure in the obedient act of his beloved Son and at the same time acknowledged Christ Jesus as his Son. Every man who takes his firm stand on the side of God and Christ Jesus will want other persons to know that fact, that they too may see the importance of serving Jehovah; therefore it is proper that he testify to that fact by publicly submitting to immersion or baptism in water. Permitting himself

to be put down under the water, in symbol he thereby says: "My selfish will is dead, and henceforth I shall delight to do the will of Jehovah God."

Such water immersion is proper for all persons who consecrate themselves to God to do his will. Those who partake of the heavenly blessings and become members of the royal house must undergo another baptism, not in water, but of far deeper significance. Concerning the baptism of those who will be of the heavenly organization the Scriptures say: "Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death; that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin."—Romans 6:3-6.

These words concerning baptism do not relate to water immersion, but do relate to baptism into the death of Jesus Christ. That means that his true and faithful followers must die as Christ Jesus died, namely, a death of sacrifice, in order that they may be raised up in the likeness of the Lord Jesus at the resurrection. Those persons of good will designated as Jonadabs do not have any part in the baptism into Jesus' death. Their hope of life is entirely earthly. All who receive life everlasting, whether in heaven or on earth, must covenant to do the will of God, and the baptism in water symbolizes that such covenant has been made;

but only those who undertake to follow and who do follow in the footsteps of Jesus, with the hope of becoming members of his royal house, must be baptized into the death of Jesus Christ.

LOVE

The question was propounded to Jesus Christ: "Master, which is the great commandment in the law?" (Matthew 22:36) Have in mind that God's law never changes; and therefore the answer of Jesus to this question relates to every creature of the human race who will get life everlasting, whether in heaven or on earth. "Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment." (Matthew 22:37, 38) The words of Jesus here show that the foregoing is God's commandment of first importance and is the greatest commandment given, first in time and first that must be observed in order to please Jehovah God. What, then, is meant by "love"?

Surely it could not mean sentimentality. According to the Scriptures *love* means an unselfish devotion to Jehovah. Love is the very opposite of selfishness. It is written, "God is love," because with him all things are unselfishly performed. Since God is the One who gives life to the creature, it is absolutely necessary for that creature to be in harmony with and therefore unselfishly devoted to God. With him God must be first in everything. There is no such thing as degrees in love. The one who loves God must be wholly devoted to him. The "heart" symbolically stands for the seat of affections, as well as the mo-

tive, and therefore the affections of the creature must be set upon the Creator and there can be no division of affections between the Creator and some creature. If any question arises that would tend to divide the affections between the Creator and the creature, then the man who pleases God must instantly decide in favor of Jehovah God. Heart devotion must be to God above all. The "soul" is the living creature, that is, the creature that breathes, moves and has an existence (Genesis 2:7); and the commandment is that the creature must love with all his soul, meaning his entire life must be devoted to Jehovah God.

The commandment is that 'thou shalt love God with all thy mind'. The "mind" is that faculty of the creature with which one searches out and ascertains what is the will of God; and this part of the commandment means that one's mind must be set upon ascertaining God's will and gladly doing it. The supreme command, therefore, is that the creature must love Jehovah, meaning to have an unselfish desire to do God's will, and then to put forth his very best endeavors to do the will of God. This commandment is given to the creature for the benefit of the creature. God's law provides that only those who love him shall receive his blessing of riches; therefore for the benefit of the creature God requires the creature to love him. That brings no profit to Jehovah, but it is the only means by which the creature can be the recipient of God's rich blessings.

How can one prove to himself or to others that he does love God and his Word? That question is answered in the Scriptures: 'This proves our love of God, that we keep his commandments and that we

do so gladly.' (1 John 5:3) Jesus and his Father are always in exact harmony or unity, and therefore he that loves Jehovah God loves Christ Jesus, because such is the commandment of God. (Hebrews 1:6; John 5:23) To those who have agreed to do his will Jesus says: "If ye love me, keep my commandments. He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him." (John 14:15, 21) Jesus Christ is the Executive Officer of Jehovah, and whatsoever commandments are given by the Lord Jesus are the commandments of Jehovah, the Father; and hence the one who loves God and Christ will faithfully endeavor to obey the commandments of God and Christ.—John 14:24.

Jehovah has not provided for man's salvation for any selfish reason or because that would bring any profit to Him. His provision for man to live is wholly unselfish, therefore an expression of love. "For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life." (John 3:16) Clearly these words mean that Jehovah has provided that mankind may receive his blessings provided the man believes in Christ Jesus and obeys him. To believe does not mean merely a mental conception, but it means that one has knowledge that Christ Jesus is his Savior and that Jehovah is the Life-giver, and that he confidently relies upon these truths, and that he honestly and sincerely endeavors to do God's will.

Jehovah does not force his blessings upon any creature. All who receive the riches of his blessings must

voluntarily comply with the rules which Jehovah has given for man's guidance. In answer to the question Jesus named the second commandment. His words are: "And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets." (Matthew 22:39, 40) No man would wish to do himself an injury. If he loves his neighbor or his fellow creature as himself, then he will have no desire nor will he make any effort to do injury to his brother. He will treat his fellow creature justly.

Jesus in another place states the rule: "And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise." (Luke 6:31) In another place the Lord states the law that governs creatures pleasing to him in this wise: "And what doth the Lord require of thee, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God?" (Micah 6:8) He who keeps these two commandments of Jehovah, and here restated by the Lord Jesus, will be pursuing the right course, which will gain for him the approval of the Most High. In doing what he believes is right man cannot be guided merely by his conscience. If his conscience condemns him, this is evidence that he is wrong. But he may be doing conscientiously that which is wrong. The conscience of man is not a safe guide unless that conscience is directed exactly in harmony with the Word of God.

Let no man deceive himself or be deceived by thinking that if he does that which is conscientiously correct he can gain life everlasting. All men came under condemnation because of sin, and the sentence of Adam and the condemnation of all others is entirely just.

Jehovah God, in the exercise of love and mercy, has provided the way for mankind to be relieved of the disability resulting from sin, and only those who follow that way can be relieved of that disability. In order for man to receive God's blessing he must do his part as the Lord has commanded. It is written in the Scriptures: "Therefore, as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life. For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous."—Romans 5:18, 19.

It was the offense of Adam that resulted in his condemnation to death. The judgment was entered against Adam and therefore he was the one sentenced to death. The effect or result of that judgment of condemnation comes upon all men, for the reason that all are the descendants of the man Adam, and that since the judgment or sentence was entered against Adam. Before any of Adam's children were born he was under the sentence of death and dying, and consequently he could not transmit to his offspring perfect life and the right to life. Such is the reason why all are born in sin and "shapen in iniquity". All imperfect creatures stand condemned by reason of this imperfection, and God cannot approve an imperfect thing. All men being born in sin, ultimately all must die unless some provision is made for them to have life. God has made that very provision by and through his beloved Son, who suffered death that men might have an opportunity to live. This is God's appointed way, and there is no other. By the disobedience of Adam many were

made sinners, and by the obedience of Christ Jesus unto death many, that is to say, as many as believe on him and obey God's commandments, are made righteous, and it is only such that are in line to ever receive at the hands of Jehovah his riches.

Let all bear this in mind, that the blessings of God are not for those who fail or refuse to believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and to obey God and Christ. Faith and obedience are conditions precedent to receiving the blessings of God that make the creature rich. All were born under condemnation, and there is only one way to get out from under condemnation. Concerning this it is written: "He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life; and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him." (John 3:36) The wrath of God here means the condemnation resting upon all who are sinners and who are alienated from God by reason of sin. The only possible way for anyone to get out from under that wrath or condemnation is by faith in the blood of Christ Jesus and obedience; and the plain words above are that those who fail or refuse to believe, after having an opportunity, shall not see life, but that such continue under the wrath or condemnation of God. This is conclusive proof that the ransom sacrifice does not inure to the benefit of all creatures automatically, but results beneficially only to those who exercise faith in God and in Christ Jesus and who obey God's Word. This is not at all out of harmony with the statement made at 1 Timothy 2:5, 6, to wit: "The man Christ Jesus, who gave himself a ransom for all." The ransom sacrifice here refers to

all those who believe, and not to all men regardless of belief.

Let no man be deceived or be induced by others into believing that he can ignore God's appointed way for salvation and at the same time receive God's blessing. To follow the teachings of imperfect men and rely thereupon is certain to lead one to disaster. For one to say that he can do what he pleases or considers to be right, and that he will be saved, is worse than foolishness and is certain to result in his destruction. Upon this point the scripture is very emphatic, to wit: "Trust in the Lord with all thine heart; and lean not unto thine own understanding. In all thy ways acknowledge him, and he shall direct thy paths." (Proverbs 3:5, 6) This shows that a man cannot lean to his own selfish reasoning or understanding, but must be guided by the Word of God, and if in all his ways he acknowledges Jehovah and Christ Jesus he is certain to be directed in the right way. To acknowledge God in his ways means that the man will diligently search the Scriptures to find out God's ways and then obey him and will give God the honor and credit for all things that he possesses.

Nor can one with safety say that he believes on the Lord Jesus Christ and then fail to inform himself of the will of God. He must know the will of God concerning him in order to do it. No one can trust in and do the will of God unless he is informed as to God's will, and for that reason the Lord has put in the way of men who are searching for truth the Bible and its explanation, and this furnishes a complete guide to the man of righteousness. He must therefore gain a knowledge of the purpose and will

of Jehovah by applying his mind to the study of God's Word. For this reason the man of God says: "Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path." (Psalm 119:105) The Lord makes clear the pathway of those who are diligent to do his will, and by the light shed upon the pathway of such he may walk in the way that is pleasing to the Lord.

It is written, in Psalm 24:1: "The earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein." That means that all riches are Jehovah's. He made the earth as a place for obedient man to live upon. "I have made the earth, and created man upon it; I, even my hands, have stretched out the heavens, and all their host have I commanded. For thus saith the Lord that created the heavens; God himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, he created it not in vain; he formed it to be inhabited: I am the Lord; and there is none else." (Isaiah 45:12, 18) God did not make the earth in vain. The earth will abide for ever, and it is the purpose of Jehovah that obedient men shall live on the earth.—Ecclesiastes 1:4.

Only those who know God and Christ Jesus as the Savior of mankind, and who obey, are in line for the great riches that God has provided for mankind. All disobedient ones will go into everlasting destruction. Those now on the earth who are known as persons of good will, and who were foreshadowed by Jonadab, are in line to be made for ever free from poverty and to enter into everlasting riches. It is therefore of vital importance to all sincere persons to gain a knowledge of God's appointed way which he has set forth in the Scriptures. Why is there so

much poverty now in the earth? This men should know and then learn what is God's true and certain remedy to remove all poverty and in the place thereof to fill the earth with prosperity, everlasting peace and happiness.

CHAPTER IV

CAUSE OF POVERTY AND DEATH

JEHOVAH is all-powerful and is wholly unselfish. Why, then, has he permitted such great poverty and suffering amongst men? Why is there such a great amount of sickness, sorrow and wickedness among the human race? Why do men die? Is Jehovah God responsible for all the poverty, suffering and death? He is in no wise responsible for such. If you will get the Scriptural and therefore the truthful answers to the foregoing questions, you will appreciate the loving-kindness of Jehovah God and Christ Jesus.

Covetousness led to the commission of the greatest and most heinous crime of all time. The result was the defamation of Jehovah's great name, and poverty and death upon the human race. So many years have passed since the commission of that crime, and so completely has the arch criminal covered his slimy tracks, that in this day it is difficult for men to understand and appreciate the enormity of the crime. Only those persons of good will toward God, and who desire to know and to do what is right, will fully understand.

To covet means to have and indulge in an inordinate desire to possess that which belongs to another. Covetousness means a wrongful desire for gain, and the determination to get that desired thing by plun-

LUCIFER RAISES THE ISSUE CONCERNING MAN
Page 163

[B L A N K]

der or other unjust and wrongful means. It is the outgrowth of extreme selfishness. The creature that wrongfully desires to possess that which belongs to another or, in his efforts to satisfy his inordinate desire, resorts to fraud, plunder or other unjust methods thereby discloses a maliciously wicked heart, fatally bent on doing injury to others.

The facts disclosed by the Holy Scriptures, and which relate to the commission of the great crime, are these: In the exercise of his unlimited power, perfect wisdom, and boundless love, God had created the heavens, consisting of the Logos, cherubim, seraphim, angels, powers and principalities, all of which show forth his glory: "The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth his handywork. Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night sheweth knowledge." (Psalm 19:1, 2) God had created the earth also. (Genesis 1:1) His due time had come to create man to inherit the earth; and that man might have a desirable place in which to reside God made a portion of the earth a veritable paradise, which he called Eden. Out of the earth elements God created a perfect creature called Adam, or man, and made him a living, moving thing endowed with intelligence. He placed man in the perfect Eden as his home and instructed the man concerning his law and the penalty that would result for the breaking of that law. (Genesis 2:7, 15-17) He created and gave man a helpmate, a perfect woman, and clothed that perfect pair with the ability and power to bring children into existence. If the man would be faithfully obedient to God's law the earth was to be his home for ever and he would enjoy riches in abundance.

In the language of the psalmist, man is "fearfully and wonderfully made". God created man, and says the psalmist: "Marvellous are thy works." (Psalm 139:14) The perfect man was the crowning or highest part of God's earthly creation. In Jehovah's invisible or heavenly realm there was a spirit creature named Lucifer, and God made Lucifer the invisible overlord of man. Of Lucifer it is written in God's Word: "Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire."—Ezekiel 28:14.

The term "cherub" means one of God's anointed, to have charge over a certain part of his organization. The description of Lucifer, "the anointed cherub that covereth," clearly shows the high position he occupied. God had appointed him and made him to fill that high office in God's "mountain" (universal organization). That Lucifer had charge over Eden, the perfect man and the home of the perfect man, is shown by the words of the scripture: "Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created." (Ezekiel 28:13) He was a beautiful creature and his appearance was glorious: "Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee." (Ezekiel 28:15) This shows that Lucifer was perfect and continued so until he

became lawless, that is, rebellious against God.—See *Vindication,* Book Two, page 91.

When Lucifer became perverse, lawless and wicked, God changed his name, and from that time onward he is designated in the Scriptures under four names, to wit: *Serpent,* which means Deceiver; *Satan,* which means Opposer; *Dragon,* meaning Devourer; and *Devil,* meaning Slanderer. While perfect, Lucifer was the god or mighty ruler over the world, and that office was not taken away from him immediately upon his becoming wicked. For centuries he has been the "god" or invisible ruler of the world which he has made wicked.—John 12:31; 14:30.

HIS CRIME

Having access to the courts of heaven, Lucifer saw the glory and splendor of Jehovah and observed that all creation worshiped God. Knowing himself to be the overlord of man as well as chief one over the host of angelic creatures, Lucifer desired to have the worship, praise and honor that belong to and which all righteous creatures give to Jehovah. Lucifer's desire was inordinate and excessive, and he therefore became covetous. He ceased to love God. He became iniquitous or a breaker of God's law. This is proved by these words of the scripture recorded after Lucifer had committed his great crime: "How art thou fallen [degraded and debased] from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation,

in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds: I will be like the Most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell [(Hebrew) *sheol:* the grave], to the sides of the pit." (Isaiah 14:12-15) It was covetousness that led to his great crime, and this is shown by the words which apply to Satan at the end of his career: "O thou that dwellest upon many waters, abundant in treasures, thine end is come, and the measure of thy covetousness." —Jeremiah 51:13.

God required of the perfect man Adam full obedience. Note that God did not require a very great thing of man, such as moving a mountain, but he required of man that he should refrain from eating a certain fruit that grew in Eden. He informed man that disobedience would result in his death. "For in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die"; (*margin*) "dying thou shalt die." (Genesis 2:17) It would not have been difficult for Adam to respect the law of God and be obedient. The evil was not in the fruit, but his crime consisted in the disobedience to God's law.

Lucifer, being overlord of man, knew man's duty toward God, and it was the duty of Lucifer to safeguard the interests of man. His crime, like all others, began in his mind, when he coveted that which properly belonged to Jehovah. To carry out his covetous desire he would resort to fraud and deceit; therefore he is called "the Serpent", meaning Deceiver. (Revelation 20:1-3) 'Now the Serpent was more subtle than others.' (Genesis 3:1) That means that he was cunning, crafty, bad and deceitful. He reasoned that if God did not put man to death for the violation

of his law, such would prove God a liar and that would destroy the confidence of creatures in the Creator; and that if God did kill Adam because of his violation of God's law, that would prove that God could not put a perfect man on earth who would remain true and faithful to God, and likewise that course would destroy the confidence of creatures in the Creator and the result would be that the Devil would get adulation and the praise which properly belongs to Jehovah.

In carrying out his wicked scheme Satan the Serpent approached Eve: "Yea, hath God [(*margin*) Yea, because God hath] said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?" and for that reason are you not eating the good fruit? (Genesis 3:1) [*Rotherham*] To him Eve replied: "We may eat of the fruit . . . but of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die." (Genesis 3:2, 3) Doubtless Satan laughed at Eve's simple faith. "And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: for God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened; and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil." (Genesis 3:4, 5) That statement of Satan was a willful and deliberate lie, and under the influence of that lie Eve violated God's law. Satan had deceived the woman and had accomplished through her what he desired, to turn her away from Jehovah. Adam then appeared and was told by Eve what had come to pass, and Adam "did eat" of the forbidden fruit also. That shows that Adam did not love God, because he willfully disobeyed him. (1 Timothy 2:14) Nor did he love Eve,

because if he had loved her he would have sought God's face, asking for her forgiveness, seeing that she had been deceived. Adam knew Eve would be separated from him if he should remain true to God, and he willfully desired to have her for his own pleasure.

Adam and Eve were sentenced to death and expelled from Eden, and justly so. (Genesis 3:19-24) That wicked lie and deceitful act of Satan brought death upon humankind. For that reason Jesus said of Satan the Devil that 'he was a murderer and a liar from the beginning'. (John 8:44) From then till now all persons who resort to lies to accomplish their wrongful purpose are instruments of the Devil, who is the father of lies.

In Eden the food was perfect and would have sustained human life forever to the obedient ones. Outside of Eden the food produced upon the earth contained poison. Adam and Eve were expelled from Eden, and death was gradually inflicted upon them until they were dead. During the lingering years that they existed their children were born, and, the parents being sinful, they could not bring into existence perfect children, and for that reason every person born into the world in the natural way has been born a sinner and in due time must die. (Romans 5:12; Psalm 51:5) All sickness and sorrow, all poverty and suffering, and all crime that has befallen the human race from the day of Eden till now, is chargeable to Satan the Devil. All persons who willfully or purposely indulge in a course of action that causes others to suffer sickness or to be impoverished and oppressed are the instruments of the Devil.

SATAN TO DIE

At the time God sentenced Adam to death he also entered the judgment of death against Satan. (Genesis 3:15; Isaiah 14:14-20; Ezekiel 28:18, 19) Why, then, has God permitted the Devil to live all these centuries and cause so much suffering upon humankind? A brief answer is, that Satan boastfully declared his own ability to cause all men to turn away from God and curse him, and God has permitted Satan the opportunity to prove his boastful challenge and at the same time has offered man the opportunity to prove his integrity toward God.

Satan boastfully said to Jehovah that all men when put to the severe test would curse God. Had God immediately put Satan to death without the opportunity to prove his boastful challenge, there would have been for ever a doubt in the minds of some creatures as to whether or not Satan had stated the truth. A prophetic drama is recorded in the Scriptures in proof of these points, and it is concerning the good man Job and the Devil. Job, the chief player, was a righteous man. Satan declared he could cause Job to curse God. (Job 2:3-5) God accepted the challenge of Satan. The test would prove whether or not a man under the severe test would remain true to God. Necessarily that test involved the question of the supremacy of God. The test would afford an opportunity to all intelligent creatures to choose between God and the Devil; therefore the decree of Jehovah was that he would let Satan live for a certain period of time, during which time the test would be on, and that at the end of that time God would destroy Satan. Pharaoh of Egypt was an official representative of the Devil

on earth and was used to play a part foretelling God's purpose in permitting Satan to live for a time; as it is written: "But for this cause have I allowed thee to remain, in order to show thee my power; and in order that they may proclaim my name throughout all the earth."—Exodus 9:16, *Leeser*.

The test began with the first children of Adam and will continue and be completed at the battle of Armageddon. In the meantime God brings to the attention of man the truth in order to afford man the opportunity to choose whom he will serve, whether God or the Devil. Cain, the first son of Adam and Eve, chose to follow the Devil, and lost. Abel chose the better part and served Jehovah God and received God's approval. Satan caused Cain to murder Abel.—Hebrews 11:4-40.

All reasonable persons who hear the truth should readily see that Satan the Devil is God's great opposer and man's greatest enemy. All persons of good will toward God will take the course that Abel took, and live. The others will follow the course that Cain took, and die and remain dead forever. In times past almost all persons have died in ignorance or without a knowledge of the truth, but in due time those who died in ignorance will be raised out of death and be given an opportunity to know the truth, and if they will then serve God they will live, and not die. Now the day has arrived when those creatures on earth who hear the truth must choose whom they will serve. Those persons of good will toward God will choose to serve him and live.

God's Word, the Scriptures, was written expressly for the guide and aid of the men who desire to do

what is right. (2 Timothy 3:16, 17; Psalm 119:105) It is Satan the deceiver who has at all times blinded man to the truth and kept man in ignorance of Jehovah's gracious provision for mankind. (2 Corinthians 4:3, 4) It is the truth alone that will lead one in the right way and enable him, through Christ Jesus, to be freed from the influence and power of Satan. Any man or company or organization of men that attempt to keep others in ignorance of God's Word are the agents or instruments of Satan the Devil, whether they realize that fact or not. Those who refuse instruction when that instruction is placed within their reach are certain to come to poverty, shame and lose everything. "Poverty and shame shall be to him that refuseth instruction: but he that regardeth reproof shall be honoured." (Proverbs 13:18) He who is indifferent toward the truth of God's Word can never enter into the riches of the Lord.—Proverbs 20:13; 23:21.

We are now in the day when God has put upon those who have agreed to do his will the obligation to tell others about God's provision for man and to warn men against the Devil and his organization. Such warning must be given both to the wicked and to those who are of good will. (Ezekiel 3:18-21) The present is the day when Jehovah is causing his witnesses to testify to others concerning his name and his kingdom; and when that witness work is done, then Jehovah will exhibit his supremacy by destroying Satan and all of his followers. (Isaiah 43:10-12; Matthew 24:14-21) Those of good will called "Jonadabs" must now inform themselves of the truth, and this can be done only by the study of the Scriptures

and the printed literature that helps to understand the prophecies now in course of fulfillment. Those who will be helpful to their fellow man in understanding the truth must be men who 'hate covetousness'. (Exodus 18:21) If you come in contact with men or organizations of men that are reaching out for gain, whether that gain be numbers in their organization, or property, money, power or influence, avoid such, because they cannot be the servants of God. You will better understand when you observe how Satan has builded up in the earth his powerful organization, which has at all times been in opposition to God.

SATAN'S ORGANIZATION

Satan's objective at all times is to defeat God in the great contest for supremacy. God has permitted Satan to go his full limit in wickedness and has not hindered him, but in due time God will prove to all creation that Satan is a liar and the very embodiment of wickedness, and that Jehovah is true and wholly righteous. Satan began building up his earthly organization at Shinar when the Devil induced men to say: "Let us build us a city, and a tower whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth."—Genesis 11:4.

Nimrod was put forward as one greater than God, and the people were induced to follow him. (Genesis 10:8-10) That was the Devil's scheme of starting religion to induce creatures to give honor and glory to a man, that he might thereby turn men away from Jehovah. Ever thereafter the Devil has employed three

chief elements in his organization to carry on his wicked work, which elements are religion, which means a form of hypocritical worship; commerce, which means a selfish dealing to reap material gain; and politics, which means an exercise of the ruling power by a few over the people. Ancient Babylon, particularly, represented the Devil religion; ancient Egypt, commerce; and ancient Assyria, political control.—See *Prophecy,* chapter six, page 124.

From the time of ancient Babylon until the organization of the nation of Israel every nation on earth practiced the Devil religion. God took the descendants of Israel out of the land of Egypt, made with them a covenant and gave them his law, and taught them the true worship of Almighty God. (See Exodus 20:1-10.) That people was the only people that God dealt with in this manner. (Amos 3:2) In time the Devil overreached the Israelites and as a nation they turned away from God and practiced Baal or Devil religion, and for that reason the nation was destroyed. (Ezekiel 21:24-27) The Israelites were a typical people and what came to pass upon them and those used in connection with them prophetically foretold what should come to pass at the end of the world, where we now are. The nation of Israel particularly foreshadowed the nations that compose "Christendom", which nations claim to be Christian. Out of the nation of Israel came a few men who remained faithful and true to Jehovah, maintained their integrity toward God, and received his approval. Likewise out of "Christendom" and from among the professed Christians there have been a few men who maintained their integrity toward God, being faithful to him. The

leaders or clergy of Israel and the principal ones of their flocks became heady, self-important and austere, and sought the approval of men rather than the approval of God, and thus they fell away to the Devil. The leaders of "Christendom", that is, the clergy and the principal of their flocks, have builded up a powerful organization which they call "the church", and these have become heady, self-important, austere and scornful men who seek gain and the approval of men rather than the approval of God. The words of God by his prophet apply to both "Israel after the flesh" and modern Israel called "Christendom", as it is written: "For from the least of them even unto the greatest of them every one is given to covetousness; and from the prophet even unto the priest every one dealeth falsely."—Jeremiah 6:13.

The Scriptures speak of preachers or clergymen as "prophets". These men have builded up a great and powerful organization in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and claimed to preach the Word of God, while in fact they preach only the doctrines of men and keep the people in ignorance of what the Bible contains. Concerning such God says: "The prophets prophesy lies in my name; I sent them not, neither have I commanded them, neither spake unto them: they prophesy unto you a false vision and divination, and a thing of nought, and the deceit of their heart." (Jeremiah 14:14) All such are servants of the Devil, and not the servants of God. "Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?"—Romans 6:16.

These things are said, not for the purpose of holding up men to ridicule, but because God has commanded that the truth shall be told in order that the people of good will toward him now on the earth may know the truth and walk in the right way. To follow the teachings of selfish men leads to certain death. To follow the teaching of God and Christ Jesus means life everlasting. (John 17:3) Each one must choose for himself whom he will follow and serve.

JEHOVAH'S ORGANIZATION

Jehovah's *universal* organization has existed from the beginning. With faithful Abraham God began the development of his *capital* organization, which he will use to destroy Satan and his organization, and by which he will administer blessings to the faithful humankind. To Abraham God said: 'In thy seed shall all [obedient of the] families of the earth be blessed.' (Genesis 12:3; 22:18) "Even as Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness. Know ye therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham. And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the [nations] through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, In thee shall all nations be blessed."—Galatians 3:6-8.

The only son of Abraham and Sarah was Isaac, and at the Lord's command Abraham offered up Isaac in sacrifice. (Genesis 22:2-18) That offering up of Isaac was a prophetic picture. Abraham there pictured Jehovah the Father or Life-giver; Isaac pictured Jesus the Son, who was offered as a sacrifice for man; and it is through the antitypical Isaac, Christ

Jesus, that God the Father will administer blessings to all obedient ones of the earth.—Romans 9:7; Galatians 4:28.

Christ Jesus is the Redeemer and Savior of the world, and he is the Head over his organization, the body members, which is the true church. Organizations formed by men and called "churches" are not the church of God, but such organizations have been used by Satan to deceive men and to turn them away from the true God. Jehovah God raised up Christ Jesus from the dead, "and hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all." (Ephesians 1:19-23) "And he is the head of the body, the church; who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have the pre-eminence." (Colossians 1:18) Since the day of Pentecost God through Christ Jesus has been selecting the true church, that is, the members of the body of Christ, the aggregate number of which is 144,000; and those who are selected must be witnesses to the name of Jehovah God.

TIME LIMIT

In the year 606 B.C. God cast away the nation of Israel, and then and there Satan became the invisible ruler or "god" over all the nations of the earth. God fixed a time limit wherein Satan would be permitted without interruption to prosecute his wicked rulership. That time limit was 2,520 years and ended in A.D. 1914. At this latter date Satan's world ended, as Jesus foretold it would, and the evidence, as Jesus stated, marking that end would be the world war and

that which immediately followed. (Matthew 24:3-15) It was in A.D. 1914 that the prophecy of Jehovah had fulfillment, to wit: "Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion." (Psalm 2:6) "The LORD shall send the rod of thy strength out of Zion; rule thou in the midst of thine enemies." (Psalm 110:2) It was in 1914 that the following prophecy began to have its fulfillment, to wit: "We give thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, which art, and wast, and art to come; because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned. And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great; and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth."—Revelation 11:17, 18.

SIGNS IN HEAVEN

Because God's due time had come to make known certain truths those who are devoted to Jehovah from and after 1918, when "the temple of God was opened", were permitted to see and understand the meaning of the 'two great wonders or signs in heaven', described in Revelation 12:1-5. That prophecy describes a woman, "clothed with the sun," and "with child", which child she brought forth and who becomes the ruler of the nations of the earth. The woman there mentioned symbolically stands for God's universal organization. (Isaiah 54:1-12) The "man-child" is Christ Jesus, God's King, who is the world's Rightful Ruler. That was the first "great wonder" or "sign" (*margin*).

The second sign is pictured as 'a great red dragon

standing before the woman, ready to devour the man child'. That red dragon symbolically pictures Satan and his wicked organization now determined to destroy the kingdom of God under Christ. Immediately upon Christ Jesus' being sent forth to rule a war began in heaven between the forces of Satan and Christ and His angelic host: "And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, and prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world; he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him."—Revelation 12: 7-9.

Since 1914 sorrows and troubles upon earth have continued to increase, even as Jesus foretold (Matthew 24: 7, 8) The poverty, suffering, crime and death upon the earth continue to increase with severity. The clergy of the various organizations called "churches" continue to tell the people that all these present-day calamities upon the human race God has brought upon them because they are not faithfully supporting the church. Such statements from the clergy tend to turn honest people against God and to cause them to curse him. That is exactly what the Devil desires to accomplish; hence they are playing into the hands of the Devil. God is in no wise responsible for the sufferings of humankind, nor for any of the calamities that come upon mankind. What, then, is the reason for so much poverty, suffering, distress, woe and calamities upon the people? The answer is given in these words: "Woe to the inhabiters of the earth, and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath,

because he knoweth that he hath but a short time."—Revelation 12:12.

This definitely fixes upon Satan the cause of this suffering and trouble. The day for the final settlement of the great controversy between God and the Devil is at hand. Soon the battle of Armageddon, the great battle of God Almighty, will be fought; and Satan knows that his time is short, and therefore he is determined to carry out his boastful challenge to turn men away from God and into destruction. He causes his earthly agents or representatives to induce the people to believe that God is responsible for all their suffering, whereas the Devil himself is the cause thereof.

Those who are witnesses now to the kingdom of Jehovah are commanded to go and tell the truth to the people. Such are the children of God's "woman", that is, his organization; and, being the last of those witnesses just before the great battle, these are called "the remnant of her seed", and it is these witnesses that the Devil, the old Dragon, and his agents, now attempt to destroy: "And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ."—Revelation 12:17.

The Lord has commanded that his truth must be told to the people, that those of good will may hear and take the course of safety. (Matthew 24:14) If his witnesses fail or refuse to tell the truth, they will suffer destruction because of their disobedience. (Acts 3:22, 23) Jehovah's witnesses love him and his truth and they delight to obey his commandments, and for

that reason they continue to tell the truth in the face of great opposition. Every one who now loves the truth will be telling the truth to others. To be sure, the truth exposes lies by which Satan has deceived the people for many centuries, and for that reason the truth "shocks the religious susceptibilities" of those who have made much profit out of organized religion. You will find safety only in God's organization, and it is therefore of absolute necessity that you learn what are the lies by which the people have been deceived, that you may avoid those who teach lies, and that you learn what is the truth, that you may take the right way.

CHAPTER V

LIES

A LIE is a false statement made by one to another one who is entitled to hear and to know the truth, and which false statement tends to work injury to the other. A false statement made for the purpose of deceiving and working injury to another is a deliberate and malicious lie.

God appointed Lucifer as man's overlord. Faithfulness to God and duty to man required Lucifer to tell the truth. Eve was entitled to know the truth. Lucifer stated to Eve that 'the eating of the forbidden fruit would not result in her death, but the eating thereof would result in great wisdom to her'. By that false statement Eve was deceived, and the false statement resulted in Eve's death and brought suffering and death upon all mankind. Lucifer's statement to Eve, therefore, was a deliberate, wicked and malicious lie. It was the beginning of lies.

Lucifer, now known as Satan the Serpent, is the most fertile of all liars. From the very moment he became Satan he was a liar. His first lie resulted in murder. Jesus said of Satan the Devil: "He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it." (John 8:44) "Father" means originator or life-giver. All lies originate with Satan the Devil, and those persons who indulge in

telling lies are the children of the Devil. For this reason Jesus said to the chief men or clergy of the Jews: "Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do." He that is of God sees God's Word and obeys. Therefore those who repeat Satan's lies are children of the Devil.—John 8:44, 47.

The words of Jesus make a clear distinction between truth and lies. Replying to a question propounded to Jesus, he said: "To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should [be a witness to] the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my voice." (John 18:37) "God . . . cannot lie." (Titus 1:2; Hebrews 6:18) He is the true and righteous One, and his Word is the truth. (John 17:17) It follows, then, that all doctrines or teachings of men, which are contrary to the Word of God, are false teachings; and if such doctrines or teachings tend to do injury to others, then such doctrines or teachings are lies. You are now about to give consideration to doctrines or teachings about which you have heard much, and for your own welfare you must determine whether or not those doctrines or teachings are true or false. If you find that doctrines, when measured by the Word of God, are contrary to the Word of God, then it is certain that such teachings are lies and that they proceed from the Devil, the originator or father of lies. If you find that a doctrine or teaching is a lie, you should quickly forsake it, regardless of who teaches it or how long you have believed that teaching to be true. Your own welfare and your duty to God demand that you abandon lies, no matter who teaches them, for the reason that the

end of the maker and supporter of lies is eternal death. —Revelation 21:8, 27.

God hates a speaker of lies. (Proverbs 6:16-19) "A false witness shall not be unpunished, and he that speaketh lies shall perish." (Proverbs 19:9) The Devil lied to and deceived the perfect woman Eve. It is certain, then, that the Devil by and through his agents lies to and deceives many imperfect creatures. There is only one possible way to find safety, and that is to learn the truth of God's Word and follow that and keep away from the teachings of men which are contrary to the Word of God. If you find that you have been for some time in an organization called "the church", and that such organization teaches that which is contrary to God's Word of truth, then you will have to choose whether you will remain in accord with that so-called "church" organization and its teachings or will forsake the same and rely upon the Word of God. As you consider the following points the test will be upon you. Ask the God of all wisdom and comfort to let you see the truth.

DEATH

You have often heard some human teacher say: "There is no death; when a man is taken away in what is called death he is not in fact dead but passes on to live; his body dies, but his soul lives on for ever." In brief, such is the teaching of practically all the religious organizations of "Christendom". Is that doctrine or teaching true, or is it a lie? The Scriptures emphatically answer that such teaching is Satan's lie. God said to man: 'In the day that you sin, you shall surely die.' (Genesis 2:17) The liar

Satan said: "Ye shall not surely die." (Genesis 3:4) Jesus says: 'Satan is the liar.' (John 8:44) Whom do you believe? It is written: "The wages of sin is death." (Romans 6:23) If there is no death, then the creature must be immortal, which means that he cannot die. One lie needs support by another lie; therefore another doctrine taught by the religious organizations is, that the soul of man is immortal and lives on forever. That is another lie.

God says that every man is a soul. No man has or possesses a soul. "And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul." (Genesis 2:7) This scripture proves that the body and breath of life, together, constitute the "soul" or moving, living creature. When the breath of life is separated from the body the creature dies, and hence the soul is dead. For this reason it is written: "The soul that sinneth, it shall die." (Ezekiel 18:4; James 5:20; Revelation 16:3) All persons are souls, and because of inherited sin such souls die. "What man is he that liveth, and shall not see death? shall he deliver his soul from the hand of the grave?" (Psalm 89:48) Pause and think. Angels are not immortal, because all the wicked angels God will destroy. (Psalm 145:20) The Devil is not immortal, because God has declared that he shall be destroyed by Christ Jesus. (Hebrews 2:14) Who, then, is immortal? The Scriptures say: God "only hath immortality". (1 Timothy 6:16) God raised Jesus out of death and gave him immortality, and never again can Jesus die; therefore Christ Jesus the divine is now immortal. (Revelation 1:18) God will give immortality to the 144,000

associates of Jesus in the kingdom and will give it to none other. (Revelation 2:10; Romans 2:7; 1 Corinthians 15:53) From these scriptures you see that the doctrine of inherent immortality of all souls is another lie of the Devil, told to deceive man, and which works everlasting injury to men.

PURGATORY

The leaders or chief men of the great religious organization of earth teach and thereby induce millions of persons to believe that when a person dies that person goes immediately, if good, to heaven; otherwise, to purgatory or to eternal torment; and that all such are fully conscious and have knowledge of what is being done concerning themselves. If you find that the dead person is not conscious and has no knowledge whatsoever, then you will know that the teaching concerning purgatory is another lie of Satan, made and taught to deceive and injure others.

Purgatory and eternal torment, commonly called "hell-fire", do not exist. Those who are dead are not conscious anywhere. "For the living know that they shall die: but the dead know not any thing, neither have they any more a reward; for the memory of them is forgotten. Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might; for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, whither thou goest." (Ecclesiastes 9:5, 10) "The dead praise not the Lord, neither any that go down into silence." (Psalm 115:17) In the light of these scriptures it is certain that those who have died are not suffering anywhere. Being an honest person, you have found it difficult to love a god who would tor-

ture a living creature in fire or in any other manner. You would not torture a dumb brute. The doctrine of eternal torment makes God appear a fiend rather than a God of love, and that is what the Devil desires. The doctrine of purgatory is another one of Satan's lies, made and told to deceive men and cause them to hate, disobey and reproach God.

Those who teach the false doctrine of purgatory cite only one Scriptural text in their attempt to find support, and that text does not at all support their teaching. That scripture is concerning the thief that was crucified at the same time Jesus was crucified, and a record thereof is found at Luke 23:39-43. One of the thieves, just before dying, said to Jesus: "Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom. And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee today, Shalt thou be with me in paradise?" (Luke 23:42, 43; see *Rotherham*) Manifestly the thief believed Jesus to be God's appointed King of the world and that in the future Christ Jesus would come into his kingdom, and the thief wanted to be remembered by the Lord at that time. The answer of Jesus was: "Shalt thou be with me [that is, on my side; believe and obey me] in paradise?" If the thief, when raised out of death, does take his stand on the side of the Lord Jesus Christ, and obeys, then he will have regeneration and receive the riches of life and his home will be in paradise, that is to say, the beautiful earth, "paradise" meaning a garden like Eden. Jesus did not come into his kingdom the day that he died. For three days he was dead and in the grave, and at the end of that time God raised him out of death, and forty days later Jesus ascended into heaven, and ap-

proximately nineteen hundred years later Jesus came into his kingdom and was placed upon his throne and sent forth to rule.–Psalms 2:6; 110:1, 2; Rev. 11:18.

The thief will never be in heaven, because the promise to him is that if he is on the side of Christ Jesus he will be in paradise. It is certain that the thief did not go to heaven or paradise that day that he died. If he did, then he got there long before Jesus did; and we know that such a conclusion is wholly unreasonable. The thief died and was put in the grave and is still in the grave awaiting the time to be awakened out of death according to the promise of the Lord. (John 5:28, 29) The words of Jesus to the thief were these: 'Today I say unto thee (that is, I am saying it now, this day), Shalt thou be with me in paradise?' You see that this scripture in no wise supports the "purgatory" doctrine.

The doctrine of purgatory is a lie because it is false and because the teaching of that doctrine has worked great injury to millions of persons. Men in the church organizations have induced millions to believe that their friends who have died are conscious and are suffering in purgatory and that the prayers of men called priests can relieve them from their sufferings. The people are thereby induced to give up their money to the priests to say prayers for those supposed to be in purgatory. Many an honest man has been induced to pay a large sum of money for such prayers. Certainly this manner of obtaining money is getting it under false pretenses and to the injury of those who pay. The greatest injury, however, is: inducing the living person to believe that his dead friends are

suffering in purgatory at the hands of Jehovah; and such is a defamation of God's name and tends to turn millions of honest persons away from God; and that is what the Devil is working for.

Is there any hope for those who have died in ignorance of the truth? Yes; and that hope is in the resurrection of the dead. It is written: "There shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust." (Acts 24:15) "Because he hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness, by that man whom he hath ordained; whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead." (Acts 17:31) Resurrection means to bring one back to life. If a person is alive in purgatory or in torment, that person could not be resurrected. Resurrection of the dead is sure and certain because the Lord has so provided, and that certainty alone proves that the doctrine of purgatory is another of Satan's lies.

Have those who are good gone immediately to heaven at death? No; because resurrection of the dead does not take place until the coming of Christ Jesus and his kingdom. (2 Timothy 4:1) The faithful apostle declared that he would receive his resurrection at the second coming of the Lord. (2 Timothy 4:8) Such faithful followers of the Lord Jesus Christ are the ones who have part in the chief resurrection or "first resurrection", and become members of the royal house of Jehovah in heaven, and that number is limited to 144,000. The hope of all other persons is in a resurrection and an opportunity for life everlasting on the earth.

TRINITY

Another lie made and told by Satan for the purpose of reproaching God's name and turning men away from God is that of the "trinity". That doctrine is taught by the religionists of "Christendom" and is in substance this: 'That there are three gods in one; God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost, all equal in power, substance and eternity.' No man can explain that doctrine, because it is false. That false doctrine was prominent in the religions of ancient Babylon and Egypt and among other mythologists, all of which are Devil religions.

If you ask a teacher of the trinity doctrine to explain it, he invariably answers: "That is a mystery which you cannot understand." The doctrine was first introduced into "organized Christianity" by a Greek clergyman in the fourth century. To aid the gullible people to keep the thing somewhat fixed in mind an image was introduced, a triangle, a circle, a trefoil or three-pointed thing that was used as an object lesson. Men desiring to appear wise before others fell easy victims to Satan's subtility and were induced to turn away from the truth of God's Word and to make images to be employed in their worship and thus to induce others to believe that there is not one Almighty God, but three. Concerning such foolish persons the Scriptures say, "They . . . became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened: professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, and changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man." (Romans 1:21-23) The fraud and deceit of Satan's agents appears in connection with the so-

called "trinity" when it is seen that the doctrine attempts to nullify God's provision for the salvation of men by and through the sacrifice of Christ Jesus. It denies the value of the shed blood of Christ Jesus.

The Scriptures show conclusively that there is but one Almighty God, who is the Life-giver of creatures, and that Christ Jesus is the Son of God, the beginning of creation and the active agent of Jehovah in the creation of all other things. In giving his law to man Jehovah said: "I am Jehovah thy God, . . . Thou shalt have no other gods before me. Thou shalt not make unto thee a graven image, nor any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth." (Exodus 20:2-4, *A.R.V.*) "I am the LORD [Jehovah]; that is my name," and "there is no God beside me". (Isaiah 42:8; 45:5) 'There is one God, and Father over all.' (Ephesians 4:6) He is the King Eternal, without beginning, and without end. "But the LORD is the true God, he is the living God, and an everlasting King: at his wrath the earth shall tremble, and the nations shall not be able to abide his indignation."—Jeremiah 10:10; Deuteronomy 33:27.

Jesus Christ, the Son of Jehovah God, the beginning of creation, was originally called "the Logos", and he says: "Jehovah possessed me in the beginning of his way." (Proverbs 8:22, *A.R.V.*) The Logos, the Son, was the beginning of creation, and him God has appointed heir over all things.—Ephesians 3:9; Hebrews 1:1, 2.

The testimony of Christ Jesus fully corroborates the foregoing. Jesus said: "I am come in my Father's name." (John 5:43) "For I came down from

heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me." (John 6:38) "My Father is greater than I." (John 14:28) "The head of Christ is God." (1 Corinthians 11:3) "I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me." (John 5:30) "For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak." (John 12:49) When Jesus had finished his work, he prayed to Jehovah God his Father and said: "Father, . . . glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee." On that occasion he uttered the prayer which is recorded at John the seventeenth chapter, all of which prayer is addressed to Jehovah his Father. If the Father and the Son were one in substance and eternity, why should one pray to himself?

On one occasion Jesus said: "I and my Father are one." (John 10:30) He did not mean that they were one person or substance, but that they were at unity, always working together in full harmony. In his prayer to the Father Jesus makes clear the meaning of the word "one", to wit: "Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; that they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me." (John 17:20, 21) Jesus the Son was sent from heaven to earth that he might lay down his life as a ransom price for mankind. "The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly. I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known

of mine. As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep." (John 10:10, 14, 15) If the Father and the Son were one in substance, then it would be impossible for the Son to give his life a redemptive price for man. The purpose of the false doctrine of the trinity is to destroy faith in the shed blood of Christ Jesus as the ransom price for mankind.

The word "ghost" is from the Greek word which, in the *Revised Version,* is properly translated "spirit". It does not mean a person or a creature or being, but means the power of Jehovah God, which power is invisible to human eyes. The holy spirit, otherwise translated "holy ghost", therefore means the invisible power of Jehovah, which is entirely devoted to righteousness or holiness.

The doctrine of the "trinity" finds no support whatsoever in the Bible, but, on the contrary, the Bible proves beyond all doubt that it is the Devil's doctrine, fraudulently imposed upon men to destroy their faith in Jehovah God and his gracious provision for the redemption and regeneration of the human race. Therefore it definitely appears that the doctrine of the so-called "holy trinity" is another of Satan's lies.

THE ROCK

Perversion, distortion and lies, and misrepresentation of the truth, are a cunning method of Satan employed to cause people to believe a lie and thereby to turn them away from Jehovah. A striking example of such lying is found in the application that is

made of the words of Jesus concerning the church and "this rock" upon which the church is built.

One of the titles which Jehovah gives to himself is "THE ROCK", because he is the eternal foundation of his universal organization which can never be moved. It is written: "I will publish the name of [Jehovah] . . . God. He is the Rock, his work is perfect." (Deuteronomy 32:3, 4) He is 'the Rock of salvation'. (Deuteronomy 32:15) "There is none holy as the LORD: for there is none beside thee: neither is there any rock like our God." (1 Samuel 2:2) "Jehovah is my rock, . . . and the horn of my salvation." (Psalm 18:2, *A.R.V.*) "Truly my soul waiteth upon God: from him cometh my salvation. He only is my rock and my salvation; he is my defence: I shall not be greatly moved."—Psalm 62:1, 2.

The Head or Chief Corner and Foundation of Jehovah's capital organization is Christ Jesus, who is also designated in the Scriptures as a rock or precious stone. This prophetic statement appears in the prophecy of Daniel 2:34-45: a stone is "cut out of the mountain" (Jehovah's universal organization), which stone thus cut out by Jehovah becomes "a great mountain" or mass of rock and fills the whole earth; that stone or mountain is the kingdom of God under Christ. God's organization is called Zion, and in which organization Christ Jesus is the chief stone. "Therefore thus saith the Lord God, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste."—Isaiah 28:16.

In Isaiah 32:2 Christ Jesus the King is called "a great Rock". Those who are of the kingdom under

Christ are said to be "inhabitants of the rock". (Isaiah 42:11) Christ Jesus, the King, is 'the stone which the builders rejected and which is become the head stone of God's great organization'. (Psalm 118:22, 23) This and other scriptures show that Christ Jesus, who is God's anointed King, is the Head, the chief corner stone and foundation of God's capital organization. At 1 Corinthians 10:4 Christ Jesus is called the "spiritual Rock", of which Moses was a type.

All the prophets had written foretelling the coming of Christ Jesus, who would rule the world in righteousness, and these prophecies were written before Jesus came to earth. The word "Christ" means God's anointed King, the Head of his capital organization. The disciples of Jesus, being familiar with the prophecies, were looking for "The Christ". Jesus put them to a test to determine whether or not his disciples realized that he was the Christ; and that he did by propounding to them this question: "Whom say *ye* that I am?" Peter answered for the disciples: "Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God." (Matthew 16:16) Jesus then told Peter that his answer was correct and that Jehovah God had revealed that truth to Peter: "Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter [(Greek) *Petros;* that is, a piece of rock]; and upon THIS ROCK [(Greek) *Petra;* great rock] I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it." —Matthew 16:16-18.

Note that the Lord does not say: "On thee, Peter." In the classic Greek the name "Peter" was *Petros;*

and Jesus said, "Upon this [*Petra;* that is, a mass or mountain of rock, a great rock, a foundation rock] I will build my church." (See *Rotherham,* marginal note.) "This Rock" had no reference to Peter, but applied exclusively to Christ Jesus, God's anointed One, whom Jehovah laid as a sure and everlasting foundation of his capital organization. In further proof that Jesus was here fixing in the minds of his disciples that he is The Christ, note his words in verse twenty: "Then charged he his disciples, that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ." (Matthew 16:20) The proof is conclusive that the building of the church was not to be upon Peter, but upon Christ Jesus, the foundation rock.

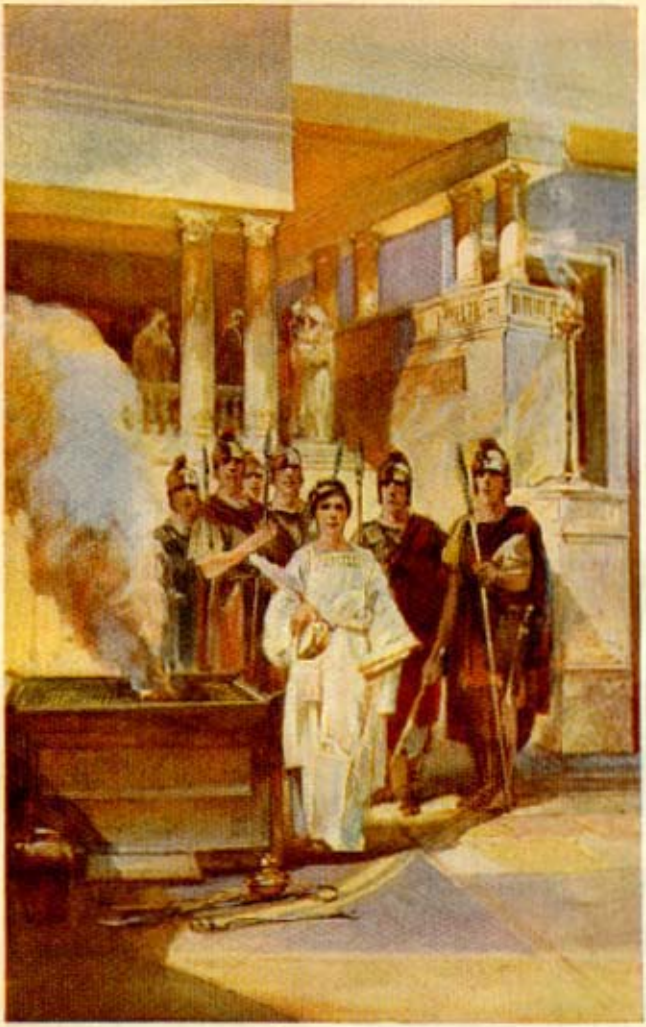
Note now the corroborative proof. When Jesus said "my church" he referred to the 'church of God' (1 Timothy 3:15), and not to any organization on earth amongst men. The word "church" means a people gathered out from the nations for the name of Jehovah God, and who are made members of his royal house in heaven. (Revelation 20:4) The church is not built upon Peter, but upon Christ Jesus. The twelve apostles of Christ are designated as twelve foundation stones; but Christ himself, the chief foundation and corner stone. (Revelation 21:14) It is written that God "gave him [Christ Jesus] to be the head over all things to the church, which is his body". (Ephesians 1:22, 23) "But now, in Christ Jesus, ye who sometimes were afar off, are made nigh by the blood of Christ. For through him we both have access by one spirit unto the Father. Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow-citizens with the saints, and of the household of God;

and are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone; in whom all the building, fitly framed together, groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord: in whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the spirit." (Ephesians 2:13, 18-22) "And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have the pre-eminence."—Colossians 1:18.

When Jesus used the words "Upon this rock", Peter understood him to mean that He would build the church upon Christ, and upon no one else; and this is proved by the words of Peter written: "If so be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious. To whom coming, as unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious, ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ. Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded. Unto you therefore which believe he is precious; but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, and a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient; whereunto also they were appointed: but ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light." —1 Peter 2:3-9.

TAKING THEIR STAND PAGE 325

THE GREAT MULTITUDE (REVELATION 7:9-17) PAGES 308-309



JEHOVAH'S EDUCATIONAL AND EXECUTIONAL FORCES PAGE 95

Knowing the Bible to be true, because it is the Word of God, can there be any doubt as to the meaning of the words of Jesus concerning THIS ROCK? The proof is conclusive that the words "THIS ROCK" mean Christ Jesus himself, who is God's Chief Executive Officer and to whom God has committed all power in heaven and in earth.

THE LIE

Now with unbiased mind note the perversion, the distortion, the twisting and the misrepresentation of the words of Jesus, by which the most subtle and tremendous lie has been fixed in the minds of many persons. Satan the Devil cunningly and gradually injected such perversion into the mind of men and for the purpose of turning men away from God. After the death of the apostles a religious organization came into existence, and gradually grew to great power and influence amongst men. That religious organization was named "Christian". Doctrines that had been taught by the pagans, or practitioners of the Devil religion, were introduced into the "Christian organization". Ambitious men in the congregations of the professed Christians became haughty, austere and scornful, and ruled the congregations in a manner suitable to their own selfish whims. They created the division between the members of the congregation, making the ruling ones "the clergy", and making the ruled ones, or common people, "the laity."

The clergy then formed the organization which they have since called "the church", of which the common people are not members. The ruling or clergy part is composed of comparatively few men, while the com-

mon people, called "the laity", finance and support the ruling organization, and such common people are numbered by the millions. To the rulers it seemed advantageous to have one man as the head or "father" of the organization. The Devil put in the mind of men that conclusion, and, needing some Scriptural authority to apparently support the same, the following false interpretation was placed upon the words of Jesus recorded at Matthew 16:16-18: That the apostle Peter, and not Christ Jesus, is the Rock mentioned in the text, and that it is upon Peter and his "successors in office" that Christ Jesus has builded the church; that Christ Jesus appointed Peter the president or head of the "Christian republic"; and that since the death of Peter a company of men have from time to time elected his successor who is father and head of the church. The ruling part of the so-called "church" is called "the Hierarchy", and upon the head of the organization has been conferred the following title: "His Holiness The Pope, Bishop of Rome and Vicar of Jesus Christ, Successor of St. Peter, Prince of the Apostles, Supreme Pontiff of the Universal Church, Patriarch of the West, Primate of Italy, Archbishop and Metropolitan of the Roman Province, Sovereign of Vatican City."

Now note the subtle ingenious and misleading argument made by distinguished writers in that religious organization in support of the false conclusion and interpretation of the words of the Lord. The following is quoted from the comments in "Haydock's CATHOLIC BIBLE", approved by John, Archbishop of New York, "according to the Douay and Rheimish Versions":

"And I say to thee, and tell thee why I before declared, (John 1:42) that *thou shouldest be called Peter,* for thou art constituted the rock upon which, as a foundation, I will build my Church, and that so firmly, as not to suffer the gates (i.e. the powers) of hell to prevail against its foundation; because if they overturn its foundation, (i.e. thee and thy successors) they will overturn also the Church that rests upon it. Christ therefore here promises to Peter, that he and his successors should be to the end, as long as the Church should last, its supreme pastors and princes."

Now note the inconsistency that appears in the same notes of the same Bible: "It is true S. Augustine, in one or two places, thus expounds these words, *and upon this rock,* (i.e. upon myself:) or upon *this rock, which Peter hath confessed."*

It is interesting here to note that Augustine, above quoted, died in the year 430 and his comments were written, of course, in his lifetime, and the subsequent commentator construed this scripture as applying to Peter, and not Christ. Also a later comment on the same text says: "Our Savior, by the words 'Thou art Peter,' clearly alludes to the new name which He Himself had conferred upon Simon, when He received him into the number of His followers (John 1:42); and He now reveals the reason for the change of name, which was to insinuate the honor He was to confer on him, by appointing him President of the Christian republic; just as God, in the Old Law, changed Abram's name to Abraham, when He chose him to be the father of a mighty nation. . . . Jesus, our Lord, founded but one Church, which He was pleased to

build on Peter. Therefore, any church that does not recognize Peter as its foundation stone is not the Church of Christ, and therefore cannot stand, for it is not the work of God. This is plain."—*The Faith of Our Fathers,* by Gibbons; written in 1876.

The construction placed upon the words of Jesus concerning "THIS ROCK" by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy is in direct contradiction of every scripture in the Bible bearing on the subject. That distortion and twisting of the Scriptures originated with Satan, the Serpent and Deceiver, and has been promulgated and carried forward by men; and since Satan is the father of lies, the men who continue to teach such perversion of the Scriptures are therefore, according to the Scriptures, the servants of Satan, whether they know it or not. (Romans 6:16) The same is a lie because it is a false statement made to those who are entitled to hear the truth, and made for the manifest purpose of causing credulous persons to serve men, and not the Lord, and thus to turn many away from God, and which has worked injury to millions of persons. Above all, it is a great reproach upon the name of Jehovah.

Out of that ingenious lie of Satan has developed and been built up "the Hierarchy of the Catholic church". Out of that lie of Satan the title "pope", which means "papa", has come. It is a title given to the man who is the head of the religious-political organization, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. The claim is made that Peter was the first pope and that he has had successors since. It is certain that Peter was never called a pope or father at any time. On the contrary,

Jesus said to his disciples, and to the people: "Call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, even Christ." (Matthew 23:1-10) Peter obeyed the Lord's word, and it is certain that he was not called "father". Contrary to this emphatic command of the Lord Jesus all the clergy of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy are called "Father" by order of the Hierarchy, and the pope is called "the Holy Father". It is plain to see that the ingenious and cunning lie of Satan has tended to turn away from God many persons and cause them to give their allegiance and devotion to man, which is for the very purpose of carrying out Satan's boast.

In order to give apparent reason for the existence of the office of pope the proponents of the theory have boldly stated that the popes are successors in office to Peter. There is not one word in the Scriptures showing that Peter ever had a successor, but all the scriptures directly contradict such claim. The Scriptures tell of the "twelve apostles of the Lamb" (Revelation 21:14), and not one word about successors of any of these apostles. 'God himself hath set the members in the body [in the church] as it pleaseth Him'; and no man nor body of men can make a change therein. (1 Corinthians 12:18) By what authority could a body of men make a successor to the apostle of the Lord Jesus Christ? Since the Lord has made no provision for successors to the apostles, the claim that men are made successors by the votes of other men, and that the pope is the successor of the apostle Peter, is absolutely false.

KEYS

On the same occasion Jesus said to Peter: "And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven." (Matthew 16:19) This statement of Christ has also been twisted and distorted and given a meaning by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy entirely contradictory to the Word of God.

In the Scriptures the word *keys* is used symbolically to represent the privilege of unlocking hidden truths and receiving an understanding thereof. On another occasion Jesus used the identical word *key* to show its meaning. The Pharisees and doctors of the law constituted the clergy and leaders of the Israelites. It was incumbent upon them, and therefore their privilege, to expound God's law to the people. They were unfaithful to God, fell into ignorance themselves concerning the kingdom, and took away from the people the opportunity to understand God's purposes. For this reason Jesus said to them, as the record at Luke 11:52 reads: 'You have taken away the key of knowledge. You entered not the kingdom yourselves, and you have hindered others from entering.' The favor which those unfaithful Jews might have had, Jesus conferred upon Peter, giving to him the "keys of the kingdom of heaven", and which clearly meant that Peter in due time should be given understanding of the kingdom of heaven.

The kingdom of heaven was a mystery hidden from the understanding of men for many centuries. The proof of this is found in the Bible, at Colossians 1:26, 27, which says: 'The mystery of the kingdom of heaven which was hidden for ages and generations, but now is made known to his saints.' The "kingdom

of heaven" means the royal house of heaven, and consists of Christ Jesus and the 144,000 members of his body. For more than four thousand years this great truth was a hidden mystery, and the disciples of Jesus did not begin to understand it until after his ascension into heaven and until the coming of the holy spirit at Pentecost. (Acts 2:14-18) When Jesus was with his disciples on earth he spoke to them in parables or dark sayings. These words appear in Matthew, chapter thirteen: 'Without a parable spake he not unto them, in order that the prophecy might be fulfilled, saying, I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world.' It was God's purpose to have this mystery revealed sometime, and therefore Jesus told Peter that he had been selected as the one who would have the privilege of first knowing the mystery concerning the development of the kingdom of heaven. Jesus gave to Peter these "keys", which means the privilege to unlock these truths for himself and for his brethren in Christ.

Note that the word *keys* is in the plural and shows more than one. The facts which subsequently appear in the Bible show that there were two keys, and that they were, to wit, (1) the first key, showing God's purpose to take out from the Jews some of the church or "kingdom of heaven" company; and (2) the key disclosing God's purpose to take out from the Gentiles or non-Jews a part of those which shall compose the "kingdom of heaven" class.

When these "keys" or privileges were given to Peter and he used them, there could be no such thing as a successor to him. There is no Scriptural proof that Peter ever had a successor. The privilege was

granted to him exclusively. He performed the privilege and duty of unlocking these mysteries; which he did by the grace of God. Now please note from the Scriptures how he did this.

Peter and the other disciples thought that Christ Jesus was going to set up the kingdom with the Jews while he was on earth; and this is proved by their words spoken to him on the very day of his ascension into heaven. They said, as appears in Acts 1:6: "Lord, wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel?" The answer of Jesus to that question was that the disciples should wait at Jerusalem until they had received the holy spirit and then they would know about the kingdom. Ten days later was Pentecost, and it was then, at Jerusalem, when Peter received the first of these keys. It was there revealed to him by the holy spirit for the first time what is the mystery of the kingdom of heaven. The second chapter of The Acts of the Apostles tells of Peter's standing up and speaking to his brethren and telling them the meaning of the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ and the beginning of the kingdom. Peter then, under the inspiration of the holy spirit of God, told the people that Jesus Christ was the approved one of God and the great Messiah or King for whom they had looked, that the Jews had put him to death and that God had raised him up out of death and had anointed him and appointed him to be King. Then Peter added these words: 'Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly that God has made Jesus both Lord and Christ, the anointed King.' It was then and there that Peter used the first key committed to him by Jesus Christ to unlock

to the Jews the mystery of the kingdom of heaven. He told them that God would send Jesus Christ again, whom the heavens must retain until the time of the setting up of the kingdom and the restoration of all things pertaining to the kingdom, and about which all the holy prophets had written.—Acts 3: 19-21.

For three and one-half years thereafter the apostles preached the gospel of God's kingdom to the Jews exclusively. Then the Lord handed to Peter the other key, by which he unlocked the mystery of the kingdom to the non-Jews or Gentiles. Peter was then at Joppa. The Lord caused to be revealed to him in a vision that the gospel must be taken to the Gentiles. At the same time Cornelius, a Gentile, had been praying to God. The record at Acts 10: 4, 5 is that the Lord by his angel said to Cornelius: 'Thy prayers and alms are come up as a memorial before God, and now send men to Joppa and call for Peter.' Then Peter went to Cornelius, and Cornelius told him of a vision that he had received by the angel of the Lord. Note now at Acts 10: 34, 35 the words of the apostle: "Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons; but in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him."

Later Peter in conference with the other disciples told them that God had visited the Gentiles and given them the gospel for the purpose of taking out a people for his name, and that these together with the Jews would constitute the kingdom of God under Christ. (Acts 15: 7-18) Thus was made clear by the second key, which Peter received from Christ Jesus, the mystery of the kingdom concerning the Gentiles.

There can be no such thing as a successor to Peter in this, because he had finished and completely used those keys by unlocking and making known God's purposes to take out the kingdom of heaven class from both Jews and Gentiles. For the purpose of confusing many and for the purpose of turning the people away from Jehovah, and to induce them to give their devotion to some creature, Satan by fraud and deception has induced many good persons to believe that Peter has had successors and that to the successor in office has been granted supreme authority in the church. This is plain blasphemy and is another proof of the means which Satan employs to use "organized Christianity" to deceive and mislead the people.

Based upon the false teaching that the church is built upon Peter, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy has further twisted and misapplied the words of Jesus, to wit: "And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven." Comments by a well-known author of the Hierarchy read: "When he says to Peter, 'I will give to thee the keys,' etc. He evidently means: I will give the supreme authority over My Church, which is the citadel of faith, My earthly Jerusalem. Thou and thy successors shall be My visible representatives to the end of time."—*The Faith of Our Fathers,* 78th edition revised and enlarged, 1904.

Be it noted that not one word is said in the Scriptures about "successors of the apostle Peter".

Out of the great lie that Christ builds his church upon Peter and his successors has also grown the falsehood that the pope is infallible and that when the pope interprets the Scriptures he speaks with au-

thority and cannot err. (*The Faith of Our Fathers,* pages 119, 120) This claim is emphatically denied by the words of Peter himself, as well as other scriptures. —2 Peter 1:20.

GATES OF HELL

Jesus said to Peter: "Upon this rock [Christ, God's anointed King] I will build my church [the 144,000 living stones thereof]; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it." What is meant by the "gates of hell"? The word "hell" means the condition of death, the tomb or the grave, while the gates refer to the way of entering into death and the grave. The death penalty was inflicted upon Adam because of sin, and by inheritance all mankind have been born in sin; and thus the "gates of hell" have stood open to all men and no man could prevail against them.

God has made Jesus to be the Redeemer and Deliverer of mankind from death and the grave. Jesus gave his life that those who believe on and obey him shall not perish, but live. In Psalm 16 it is written that Jesus died, and went to hell, but he did not remain there. (Acts 2:24-32) Christ Jesus is the Head and Foundation of the church; and hell therefore did not prevail against him, because God raised him up out of death. (Acts 10:40) Jesus then said, as appears at Revelation 1:18: "I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death." Jesus Christ gained the complete victory over death and hell. 'Having the keys,' as he stated, means that to him, Christ Jesus, has been committed the power to release mankind from death and the grave. Concerning his faith-

ful members of the royal house, the 144,000, Jesus said, at Revelation 20:6: 'Blessed and holy are they; for over such the second death shall have no power.' This is proof conclusive that hell shall never prevail against Christ and the members of his body, which is the church. These at their resurrection are made immortal; which means they will nevermore be in danger of death.—1 Corinthians 15:52-54.

Furthermore, it is written concerning Jesus and those who shall be partakers of the first resurrection and kingdom that he shall destroy the enemy death and the grave and give immortality to the members of his body. At 1 Corinthians 15:25, 26, 54, it is written: "For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet. The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death. So when this corruptible . . . shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory."

The words concerning "the gates of hell" have also been twisted by the sophistries of men and made to appear as meaning that the Roman Catholic church organization is impregnable and that nothing can prevail against it. (*The Faith of Our Fathers,* page 121) Having this false conclusion in mind, the leading men of the great religious organization have pushed forward with determination to control the world, declaring that hell shall never prevail against the Catholic church. Otherwise stated, the leaders of this organization claim that they have a covenant or an agreement with death and hell and that neither death nor hell can have any power over their organization. On the contrary, the Scriptures clearly and definitely

teach that God will completely destroy the Roman Catholic Hierarchy.

The distortion and twisting of the words of Jesus, as recorded at Matthew 16:16-18, has resulted in the most ingenious lies that Satan has created. Those lies have been told to so many generations and over so long a period of time that millions of honest persons in ignorance of the truth have been induced to believe such lies. For this reason the Hierarchy has been diligent in keeping the people in ignorance of the Bible and its true explanation. Those persons who are blindly prejudiced will continue to believe and to hold to those lies to their own great detriment and sorrow. Those who are of good will, and who are sincerely seeking the truth, will gladly lay hold upon Christ Jesus and fully embrace and follow the truth. No one is compelled to accept the truth. He is given the privilege of learning the truth, and that privilege is a gracious gift from the Lord.

MASS OF LIES

God's Word definitely shows that the following doctrines constitute a mass of lies, to wit: There is no death; every man has an immortal soul; many are in purgatory undergoing conscious suffering and can be aided and their term shortened by prayers said by men, and that it is proper to pay money to have such prayers said; that the apostle Peter is the foundation upon which God's church is built; that the apostle Peter has had successors; that Peter was the first pope and that his successors have been elected from time to time since Peter's death, and that Peter and his so-called "successors" as the pope have power

to forgive sins. The Scriptures also show without any question of doubt that all these lies originate with Satan. What organization on earth teaches these lies and thereby deceives the people? The answer is, the organization known as "the Roman Catholic Hierarchy" with its headquarters at Vatican City, Rome. Millions of the "Catholic population" are sincere and are of good will and are in no wise responsible for these false teachings. On the contrary, they have been misled and induced to support the organization, which has grown fat upon the revenue extracted from the common people or the Catholic population.

It is well known that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy is a political organization which seeks to influence and control the governments of the earth. Its ambassadors in almost all the nations, and the head of that institution, repeatedly participate in political affairs of the world. That it is not of God's organization nor following Christ Jesus is proved by the words of the Lord Jesus, who said: "My kingdom is not of this world." (John 18:36) Satan the Devil is "the god of this world", and this is the world that Christ Jesus will destroy, and that destruction will take in Satan, the prince of darkness, and every part of his organization on earth. This of itself is proof that Christ Jesus had nothing whatsoever to do with instituting and building the Roman Catholic church organization.

The men who rule the Roman Catholic organization are austere, exalted, worldly-wise, scornful, and seek to hide the inside work of that institution from the common people. Jehovah foreknew that such would be their course, and he caused his prophet to write

concerning them: "Woe unto them that seek deep to hide their counsel from the Lord, and their works are in the dark, and they say, Who seeth us? and who knoweth us? Surely your turning of things upside down shall be esteemed as the potter's clay: for shall the work say of him that made it, He made me not? or shall the thing framed say of him that framed it, He had no understanding?"—Isaiah 29: 15, 16.

The history of that organization covers a period of more than fifteen centuries, disclosing that the men who rule have kept the Bible away from the common people. God's people who seek to know and to do his will are symbolically pictured as those of Jerusalem, because on that city God put his name. The men that rule the Catholic organization scorn others who attempt to teach the truth, and falsely claim that the pope is the only one authorized to promulgate what the Scriptures teach. They claim to have a covenant with death and hell and that the gates of hell shall not prevail against their organization, but God plainly tells them through his prophet that their covenant or agreement with hell shall not stand and that their organization shall be trodden down. (Isaiah 28: 14-18) At Armageddon that organization will completely pass away. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy has taken away the true meaning of God's Word and has added its own words thereto, and concerning such Jesus said: "For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: and if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of

life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book."–Revelation 22:18, 19.

The Roman Catholic Hierarchy has made the nations drunk and stupefied with the false doctrines of that organization. The Lord applies to all parts of the Devil's organization, including the Hierarchy, the name "Babylon". To all persons who are now of good will toward God and his kingdom the Lord says: "Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues." —Revelation 18:1-4.

CHAPTER VI

PRISONERS

JEHOVAH has no prison houses and he imprisons no one. At times Jehovah's witnesses are imprisoned by the Devil and his agents, and then those faithful ones are called 'Jehovah's prisoners'; meaning that they are his people. Prison houses are places of darkness and torture. Death cannot be properly called a prison house, because no one when dead is conscious nor could therefore be in torture. Prisons are the institution of the Devil. Jehovah by his prophet says: "Behold my servant, whom I uphold, mine elect, in whom my soul delighteth. . . . I the Lord have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thine hand, and will keep thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, for a light of the Gentiles; to open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison house."—Isaiah 42: 1-7.

Satan has made the religious institutions prison houses, places of darkness and hypocrisy, and where many persons of sincerity have suffered much torture. Jehovah commissions his elect servant to get his prisoners out of Satan's prison houses.

A prisoner is one who is a captive and under restraint by another and is bound and denied his full liberty. A creature in this condition must be alive, because a dead one could not be said to be a prisoner. If a person is blind to the truth and such blindness

is caused by another, then that person is bound in fetters of ignorance. If one is in darkness and does not know which way to go, he is restrained in the exercise of freedom of action and is therefore a prisoner. Satan is the prince of darkness, and Satan, together with his many agents employed in his wicked work, holds the human race in restraint and therefore in darkness.—2 Corinthians 4:4-6; Ephesians 6:12; Colossians 1:13; 1 John 5:19.

The foregoing prophecy uttered by Isaiah appears to have its particular fulfillment at the time of the coming of the Lord Jesus in glory and power at the temple for judgment. The statement is therefore here made which, taken by itself, may be said to be dogmatic, to wit, that the prisoners mentioned in the prophecy include, (1) those who become members of the royal house of the Lord, particularly the ones pictured by Mordecai and Naomi, and also those pictured by Esther and Ruth, all forming "the remnant"; and (2) the Jonadabs or "other sheep" class. This statement is made here, not that it might appear dogmatic, but that the student may have these classes in mind when examining the various scriptures relating to the prisoners.

Those who are in a covenant with God are bound to him; but when the enemy came against them by force, they, because of fear of the enemy, failed to do their duty, and fell into Satan's snare, and hence Jehovah permitted them to be taken prisoners. These coming to a realization of their restrained condition and why thus bound and in prison, and who then turn with their full devotion to Jehovah and seek and look for deliverance by him, Jehovah hears their cries and delivers them. In harmony with this the

prophet wrote: "But I am poor and sorrowful: let thy salvation, O God, set me up on high. . . . The humble shall see this: and be glad: and your heart shall live that seek God. For the Lord heareth the poor, and despiseth not his prisoners." (Psalm 69:29-33) Manifestly the prisoners here mentioned are God's covenant people, and particularly the remnant, which were in restraint by the enemy because of their negligence, and were released by the Lord and gathered to him at the time of the coming of the Lord to the temple. They are God's own children, and they are held in restraint, bound, and are thus prisoners.

During the World War period it was the faithful devoted ones of God's saints on the earth that were in danger of death at the hand of the enemy. It was "for the elect's sake" that the period of tribulation was shortened, which period began in 1914 and was cut short in 1918 by the stopping of the World War, that the elect might serve Jehovah in bearing testimony to his name. (Matthew 24:21, 22) The faithful saints of God on earth during the World War period were groaning and praying that their bonds might be removed, and it is to them that the following text applies: "To hear the groaning of the prisoner, to loose those that are appointed to death [(*margin*) the children of death]."—Psalm 102:20.

Why were these praying that their bonds be broken and they be released from prison? They had been called and separated from the world as a 'people for the name of Jehovah', and both the facts and the words of the prophecy agree that their desire was to be released that they might serve Jehovah, as stat-

ed in the prophecy: "That men may declare the name of Jehovah in Zion, and his praise in Jerusalem." —Psalm 102:21, *A.R.V.*

The prophecy then fixes the time when the Lord would hear their prayer: "When the Lord shall build up Zion, he shall appear in his glory. He will regard the prayer of the destitute, and not despise their prayer." (Psalm 102:16, 17) The prayer of such is not disregarded; but while they thus prayed, God heard them: "For Jehovah heareth the needy, and despiseth not his prisoners." (Psalm 69:33, *A.R.V.*) With confidence these prisoners continue to pray: "For God will save Zion, and build the cities of Judah; and they shall abide there, and have it in possession. The seed also of his servants shall inherit it; and they that love his name shall dwell therein." —Psalm 69:35, 36, *A.R.V.*

DELIVERER

Jehovah God has appointed Christ Jesus the leader, commander and deliverer of his people. (Isaiah 55:4) Those who constitute the faithful anointed followers of Christ Jesus now on the earth are commanded to give witness to the name of Jehovah and to do this under the leadership of Christ Jesus. These are part of The Servant, and it is the servant of Jehovah that is commissioned to bring the prisoners out of the prison house, as stated in Isaiah 42:6, 7. The work of releasing the prisoners is done within a time of controversy or fight, when the Devil is employing all his power to turn the people away from God and to hold them in subjection and ultimately cause their destruction. The truth is now declared at God's com-

mandment that those of good will who also are prisoners may get the light and have the privilege of escaping from the prison houses of Satan.

COMMISSION

The commission of The Servant is now made known, to wit: "And I will preserve thee, and give thee for a covenant [guarantee of salvation] of the people [a people (*Rotherham*)], to establish the earth, to cause to inherit the desolate heritages." (Isaiah 49:8) The application is first to spiritual Israel, Christ Jesus being the guarantee unto the remnant, and now later a guarantee "of the people" that go up with the remnant to God's organization, that is to say, the people of good will, who constitute the "other sheep" mentioned by Jesus; and for these the elect servant is a guarantee. (See Zechariah 8:20-23; John 10:16.) The time is come to make God's name known in the earth and when his faithful ones must bear witness to his name. Therefore says the commission: "To establish the earth"; (*R.V.*) "to raise up the land". The earthly condition of the remnant was trodden down of the Gentiles during the World War period. (Revelation 11:2) When released and established, the remnant "arise" and "shine" to the honor of Jehovah's name.—Isaiah 60:1; 51:17; 52:2.

At Isaiah 49:6 it is written: "That thou shouldest . . . raise up the tribes of Jacob [the faithful remnant]." In another part of the prophecy Jehovah declares "to the cities of Judah, Ye shall be built, and I will raise up the decayed places thereof. . . . Cyrus [meaning Christ], he is my shepherd, and shall perform all my pleasure". (Isaiah 44:24-28) Refer-

ring to the same thing God through his prophet says: "In that day will I raise up [by my servant, Christ Jesus] the tabernacle of David that is fallen, and close up the breaches thereof: and I will raise up his ruins, and I will build it as in the days of old." (Amos 9:11) As to the people of good will, that is, "other sheep," the 'foundation of the earth' must be and now is laid by Jehovah, as stated at Isaiah 51:16.

The elect servant not only 'establishes the earth', but also is commissioned "to cause to inherit [to bring into possession (*Rotherham*)] the desolate heritages". (Isaiah 49:8) This prophecy first applies to spiritual Israel, which had been dispossessed during the World War period, as shown by verse 19: "As for thy waste and thy desolate places, and thy land that hath been destroyed." (*R.V.*) Such then become "trees of righteousness, the planting of Jehovah, that [his name] may be glorified". Then says the prophet: "And they shall build the old wastes, they shall raise up the former desolations, and they shall repair the waste cities." (Isaiah 61:3, 4, *A.R.V.*) This waste had been committed during the World War period. The building up of God's people, the elect, came first; then follows the work in behalf of the "other sheep" (or the Jonadab class), to whom the Lord Jesus says: "Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world." —Matthew 25:34.

Furthermore, the official commission given by Jehovah to his servant says: "That thou mayest say to the prisoners, Go forth; to them that are in darkness, Shew yourselves. They shall feed in the ways, and

their pastures shall be in all high places."—Isaiah 49:9.

Who are the "prisoners" here mentioned; according to *Rotherham,* "them who are bound"? The prisoners here are, first, the original ones made into the "faithful and wise servant" class (Matthew 24:45), foreshadowed by Mordecai and Naomi; and, those of the Ruth and Esther class, who are brought out of prison and made a part of the remnant; and then the people of good will, that is to say, the "other sheep", the Jonadabs. All of these were prisoners in Babylon, that is to say, Satan's organization, and each class in their turn are addressed by the elect servant, who says to them, "Go forth," not merely out of literal prison houses, but out from Satan's organization called "Babylon"; and this is done shortly preceding the time of Armageddon. "Remove out of the midst of Babylon, and go forth out of the land of the Chaldeans, and be as the he goats before the flocks." (Jeremiah 50:8) "My people, go ye out of the midst of her, and deliver ye every man his soul from the fierce anger of the Lord." (Jer. 51:45)–See also Jeremiah 51:6; Revelation 18:4; 2 Corinthians 6:17, 18.

These were in darkness; therefore says the commission (Isaiah 49:9) concerning them: "To them that are in darkness, Shew yourselves." This does not mean that they are naked captives led by Satan's gang and that they should show themselves as such, but that they must 'show themselves' by making a public appearance and public declaration or confession that they are out of harmony with Satan's organization, that they are out of Satan's prisoner organization and are on the side of Jehovah, and that they are living testi-

monials to the name of Jehovah; and thus they must let their light shine. (Ephesians 5:8) Concerning all who so do, and who continue faithfully to serve him, Jehovah says: "They shall feed in the ways, and their pastures shall be in all high places"; the "high places" here meaning the kingdom heights. They no longer sit in darkness, neither are they hungry, but they are led and fed by Jehovah and his good Shepherd. During the World War period their pastures were made bare, but now says the Lord God: "I will open rivers on the bare heights."—Isaiah 41:18, *R.V.*

Those of God's organization shall be led, comforted and blessed by him and his elect servant: "They shall not hunger nor thirst; neither shall the heat nor sun smite them: for he that hath mercy on them shall lead them, even by the springs of water shall he guide them." (Isaiah 49:10) These words of the prophecy appear also at Revelation 7:16, and are there applied to the "great multitude"; and this proves that the "great multitude" class is included in the prophecy of Isaiah; and this applies, not only to them, but to all those once in the prisons of Babylon, and who are brought forth and made a part of God's organization; and this is shown in the words of the prophecy: "Behold, these shall come from far; and, lo, these from the north and from the west; and these from the land of Sinim.

"Sing, O heavens; and be joyful, O earth; and break forth into singing, O mountains: for the Lord hath comforted his people; and will have mercy upon his afflicted. But Zion said, The Lord hath forsaken me, and my Lord hath forgotten me. Can a woman forget her sucking child, that she should not

have compassion on the son of her womb? yea, they may forget, yet will I not forget thee. Behold, I have graven thee upon the palms of my hands; thy walls are continually before me. Thy children shall make haste; thy destroyers and they that made thee waste shall go forth of thee. Lift up thine eyes round about, and behold: all these gather themselves together, and come to thee. As I live, saith the Lord, thou shalt surely clothe thee with them all, as with an ornament, and bind them on thee, as a bride doeth. For thy waste and thy desolate places, and the land of thy destruction, shall even now be too narrow by reason of the inhabitants, and they that swallowed thee up shall be far away.

"The children which thou shalt have, after thou hast lost the other, shall say again in thine ears, The place is too strait for me; give place to me that I may dwell. Then shalt thou say in thine heart, Who hath begotten me these, seeing I have lost my children, and am desolate, a captive, and removing to and fro? and who hath brought up these? Behold, I was left alone; these, where had they been? Thus saith the Lord God, Behold, I will lift up mine hand to the Gentiles, and set up my standard to the people: and they shall bring thy sons in their arms, and thy daughters shall be carried upon their shoulder. And kings shall be thy nursing fathers, and their queens thy nursing mothers: they shall bow down to thee with their face toward the earth, and lick up the dust of thy feet; and thou shalt know that I am the Lord; for they shall not be ashamed that wait for me."
—Isaiah 49:12-23.

Jehovah shows his mercy toward those in Babylon who seek to find God's provided way for their escape. Now, since the Lord has built up Zion and those who are on Jehovah's side recognize and appreciate the truth that Jehovah and Christ Jesus are their Teachers and Shepherds, no more are the "elective elders" or the clergy class permitted to act in the capacity of leaders and teachers. "For the Lamb, which is in the midst of the throne, shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters; and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes." (Revelation 7:17) "Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water. But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life."—John 4:10, 14.

The Lord hath not forgotten Zion! Says the prophet: "The children [the Ruth and Esther class] which thou shalt have, after thou hast lost the other [the 'evil servant' class], shall say again in thine ears, The place is too strait for me: give place to me that I may dwell." (Isaiah 49:20) This clearly indicates that there shall be a great multitude of "children" that come out from Babylon. Many people will come to the Lord, and blessed are the remnant, Jehovah's witnesses, who are commissioned to bear the fruits of the kingdom before them that they may be sustained. As the prisoners are released they must join with others in making proclamation to the name of Jehovah, advertising his King and his kingdom.

"HIGHER POWERS"

A misunderstanding of what constitutes "the higher powers" has caused many persons to be held in restraint or in Babylon's prison. It is written: "Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God. Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation. For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same." —Romans 13:1-3.

Those inspired words do not refer to the governments or rulers of the nations of earth. That scripture is addressed "to all that be . . . called to be saints" (Romans 1:7) and to no others, and the "higher powers" over such are Jehovah God and Christ Jesus, that is, God and his royal house in heaven. The powers that rule the present wicked world and which are known as "temporal powers" are not ordained of God. Jesus plainly said: "My kingdom is not of this world." (John 18:36) Also he said that Satan the Devil is the prince or ruler of this world and that Christ Jesus has no part with him. (John 12:31; 14:30; 2 Corinthians 4:3, 4) Those who are devoted to God will obey the laws of this world when those laws are not in conflict with God's law.

Jesus commanded that his followers render "unto Cæsar [the temporal or worldly governments] the things which be Cæsar's; and unto God the things which be God's". (Luke 20:25) When God commands

that a thing be done, no earthly law can override that, because God is the highest power and Christ Jesus is his executive officer and is Jehovah's "sword". (Deuteronomy 32:41) With his sword Jehovah will execute Satan and his organization. "For he beareth not the sword in vain; for he [Christ Jesus] is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil." (Romans 13:4) Every law of the governments of this world that is right should be obeyed, and all laws that are contrary to God's law are wrong and cannot be obeyed by the followers of Christ Jesus.

The following is an example: The law of the land says you must obtain a license or permit to operate your automobile upon the highway. That is not in conflict with God's law, is right, and should be gladly obeyed by all. If the state or temporal power says, "You cannot preach the gospel by going from house to house unless you first obtain a permit from the police so to do," such a law is contrary to God's law and cannot be obeyed. God specifically commands that all who agree to do his will shall preach the gospel of his kingdom to others, and Christ Jesus specifically repeats that command to his followers. (Isaiah 42:10-12; Matthew 24:14; 10:5-10) God and Christ Jesus are "the higher powers", and those who do not obey the Lord shall be destroyed. (Acts 3:22, 23) For that reason, when the apostles were arrested for preaching the gospel, they said to the officers of the temporal governments: "We ought to obey God rather than men." (Acts 5:29; 4:13-19) By obtaining a license to operate your automobile you render unto Caesar (the temporal government) a thing that is

Caesar's; and by preaching the gospel of God's kingdom by going from house to house you render unto God the things which be God's; and no earthly power can rightfully interfere with your so doing.

Because men have improperly understood the "higher powers" to be the officers of the state, they have been restrained by fear from boldly declaring the gospel of the kingdom. Satan, "the god of this world," has caused men to thus fear the temporal powers and for that reason to refrain from obeying God. Those who love God will get free from such restraint and will joyfully obey the Lord.—Romans 13:5.

During the past few years there has been a wide proclamation of the message of and concerning God and his kingdom under Christ, and many persons of good will have heard that message. Because, however, many of such persons have believed that the "higher powers" are the political rulers, such people of good will have feared to offend those officials and have thereby been held back from proclaiming the truth to others. They see many wicked things committed by officials of the church organizations and of the state, and they sigh and cry because of such abominations. God commands that his message of truth must now be taken to those persons of good will in order that they may learn and understand the truth and escape out of bondage of Satan's organization and take their stand on the side of God and his kingdom. Such is the only hope for the people.—Matthew 12:18-21, *A.R.V.*

Men have organized various peoples into nations, and both the rulers and the ruled, being ignorant of

God's Word, have fallen away victims to the deceptions of Satan and have been held in Satan's prison house. The time has now come, as clearly shown by the Scriptures and extraneous facts, for the people to be enlightened by the Lord and be enabled to see how God has opened the prison doors that all who are of good will toward him may escape from such restraint and flee to the only place of refuge, that is, to God's organization. You are now about to get a view of a gigantic organization which for centuries Satan has operated for the very purpose of keeping the people in darkness. Long ago a great prophetic drama was performed by an ancient people, which foretold how the people of good will of the present time are bound and restrained, brought into darkness, poverty and despair, and then how God opens the way and gives light to all such persons of good will that they may joyfully walk in the pathway that leads to boundless riches.

CHAPTER VII

PHILISTINES

JEHOVAH took Abraham out of the land of his nativity and led him into a strange land, which he promised to give Abraham. (Genesis 12:1-7) That was the land of Canaan. There Isaac was born to Abraham and Sarah, and thereafter Abraham, Sarah and Isaac, and their descendants, played parts in a great prophetic drama that covers a period of years and by which the development of the kingdom of God was pictured. Years later Abraham's descendants were in Egypt, and Jehovah, by the hand of Moses and Joshua, led them out, and they journeyed to the land of Canaan, which God had promised to Abraham. The descendants of Abraham were God's chosen people and pictured those of the present time who are on the side of Jehovah and Christ. When the Israelites, the descendants of Abraham, reached the promised land they found dwelling there the Philistines, who had built their strongholds along the coast of the Mediterranean sea. The Philistines greatly oppressed the Israelites, and in due time God destroyed that nation. Long after that nation of the Philistines was destroyed Jehovah caused his prophet to write the following prophecy: "Woe unto the inhabitants of the sea coast, the nation of the Cherethites! the word of the Lord is against you; O Canaan, the land of the Philistines, I will even destroy thee, that there shall be no inhabitant."—Zephaniah 2:5.

Jehovah knew the end from the beginning; as it is written: "Known unto God are all his works, from the beginning of the world." (Acts 15:18) Knowing that Satan would build a mighty organization which would reproach the name of Jehovah and do violence to those faithfully devoted to God, He foretold the same in cryptic language, which could not be understood by men until God's due time to make it plain. That time is now here. Nothing is here written for the purpose of offending or holding up persons to ridicule because of their religion or for any other reason. The sole purpose is to call to the attention of the people the truth of God's Word, to the end that those who desire to be enlightened may have that blessing. There are millions of sincere persons on the earth who are designated "Catholic population" and who are entitled to hold their views. Those persons are not at all responsible for the false doctrines held forth by the Catholic organization known as "the Hierarchy". There are millions of sincere people holding other religious views but who are not responsible for the origin or teaching of such. All sincere persons desire the truth, because these want the truth that will make them free and lead them in the right way. The truth is to be found in God's Word, and in no other place that is contrary to God's Word. Christ Jesus, the great Prophet, breaks the prison bars, opens the blind eyes, and leads those of good will into the glorious light.

Jehovah caused the foregoing prophecy to be written by Zephaniah manifestly for the purpose of foretelling a great and destructive work to be done by His hand at the end of Satan's world and when God's

King is enthroned and comes to the temple for judgment. That wonderful work when performed will be a vindication of Jehovah's name. The creatures against whom that marvelous work will be done are God's enemies, which enemies must be the ones that have greatly defamed the name of the Most High. They are enemies that have knowingly done wrong to gratify a selfish desire, and are therefore designated in the Word of God as "wicked": "But the wicked shall perish, and the enemies of the Lord shall be as the fat of lambs; they shall consume; into smoke shall they consume away." (Psalm 37:20) Such enemies are the ones that have cruelly persecuted God's anointed people because such anointed tell the truth of and concerning God and his kingdom. It seems due time for those who love and serve Jehovah to receive from his gracious hand some clear knowledge of and concerning the destruction of the enemies that now persecute them. The matter is now of peculiar interest to the remnant, and the understanding thereof will bring to them comfort and increase their hope. (Romans 15:4) "God shall let me see my desire upon mine enemies," is an assured promise to the anointed remnant. (Psalm 59:10) "Mine eye also shall see my desire on mine enemies; and mine ears shall hear my desire of the wicked that rise up against me. The righteous shall flourish like the palm tree; he shall grow like a cedar in Lebanon."—Psalm 92:11, 12.

The desire of God's faithful people is to see Jehovah's enemies completely destroyed in vindication of his name. Prophetically these words recorded in the Scriptures refer to the present time: "For he hath delivered me out of all trouble: and mine eye hath

seen his desire upon mine enemies." (Psalm 54:7) Again says the prophet of the Lord: "But God shall wound the head of his enemies, and the hairy scalp of such an one as goeth on still in his trespasses." (Psalm 68:21) Here the words "hairy scalp" seem to picture a class of enemies that have hypocritically claimed to do the will of God but at all times have been the representatives of the Devil. Those enemies "shall lick the dust".—Psalm 72:9.

WHAT ENEMIES?

The Philistines' acting in conjunction with the Israelites foreshadowed greater things to come to pass at the end of the world, and this is definitely settled by the inspired words: "Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples; and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come." (1 Corinthians 10:11) The Philistines were therefore a prophetic people foretelling specific enemies of God that would be active after the coming of the Lord Jesus to the temple, and that especially engage in the persecution of those who serve Jehovah. David had been anointed and made king of all Israel; and Abner, who had represented the northern tribes and who was manifestly carrying out the Lord's direction to bring all the Israelites unto David under the direction of the Lord, uttered these words, to wit:

"And Abner had communication with the elders of Israel, saying, Ye sought for David in times past to be king over you; now then do it; for the Lord hath spoken of David, saying, By the hand of my servant David I will save my people Israel out of the hand of the Philistines, and out of the hand of all their

enemies." (2 Samuel 3:17, 18) This prophecy clearly shows that the Philistines prophetically foretold some enemies against whom God would take positive and forceful action at the end of the world. David, the king, was a type of Christ Jesus, the beloved of Jehovah, who is now upon his throne and at the temple for judgment. Who, then, are the antitypical Philistines, the specific enemies of God and of his anointed?

The answer in brief is, that the Philistines pictured or foreshadowed the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. This, of course, includes all creatures that knowingly render aid and support to the Hierarchy in carrying on the wicked work of that wicked organization. At the present time it would necessarily include practically all the official part of the religious organizations of so-called "Christendom". There are three separate and distinct elements of Satan's organization, to wit, religious, commercial and political, and these three elements were pictured by the three nations of Moab, Ammon and Mount Seir. (2 Chronicles 20:1, 22, 23) The Philistines stand out particularly as the religious element of Satan's organization, which element takes the lead in the persecution of God's people. Because this religious element professes to serve God and does not, they are hypocrites and are despicable in the sight of Jehovah.

The prophetic drama in which Samson played a most important part emphasizes the necessity and importance of complete faithfulness to God on the part of his anointed, their faithfulness continuing even unto death. The chief point to be considered here is concerning the Philistines and the persecution of the anointed of God by the antitypical Philistines, and

God's work to be done and accomplished concerning the same. The following facts, therefore, should be carefully considered by those who love God, that they may take courage and increase their hope.

The Philistines were descendants of Ham, through Mizraim. (Genesis 10:6, 13, 14; Amos 9:7) They were worshipers of the Devil, their deities being the fish-god Dagon and Baâl-zebub. (Judges 16:23; 1 Samuel 31:8-10; 2 Kings 1:2, 3) God denounces the Philistines in his Word as "soothsayers", which means that they were Devil worshipers and practiced the Devil religion. (Isaiah 2:6) The Philistines migrated from Egypt, which is a type of Satan's organization. They moved into and took possession of a part of Palestine along the coast of the Mediterranean sea, which territory God assigned to the tribe of Judah. They were at all times the enemies and willful oppressors of God's chosen people. They therefore pictured a class of people that pretend to have come out of or forsaken Satan's organization, and pretend to worship God, but who in fact serve and worship the Devil.

The Roman Catholic Hierarchy is the official government that controls and rules the religion of so-called "Christendom". What was at one time known as "Protestantism" is now dead, and the so-called "Protestants" are dominated and controlled by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. Protestantism exists only in name, not in fact. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy is defined in its own publications as follows: "The Catholic Hierarchy, or the governing body of the Catholic Church, consists of His Holiness the Supreme Pontiff, assisted by the Sacred College of Cardinals and by several

Sacred Congregations, or permanent ecclesiastical committees, of which the Cardinals are the chief members; by the Patriarchs, Archbishops and Bishops; by the Apostolic Nuncios and Delegates, Vicars and Prefects, and by certain Abbots and other Prelates." (See *The Official Catholic Directory,* 1935.)

The Roman Catholic Hierarchy by improper means controls the thoughts and course of action of millions of people of good will, which people are ignorant of the truth. By keeping those people in ignorance the Roman Catholic Hierarchy has deceived them. The time has now come for those people of good will to be liberated from the wrongful influence of the Hierarchy, and doubtless that is the reason why Jehovah will now make known to all who love God the truth of and concerning his purpose relative to the Roman Catholic Hierarchy.

Jehovah's purpose which he has carried forward from the beginning is to establish a government or kingdom under Christ Jesus that shall rule the world in righteousness. Until that kingdom is established and in full operation in the earth Satan is the invisible ruler or "god" of the nations of the earth. For that reason Jesus said: "My kingdom is not of this world."—John 18:36.

Jesus laid down the rule that all his true followers must separate themselves from the world. Because Jesus chooses and takes out of the world those who become his true followers and are devoted to him, such ones so taken out are the objects of persecution by Satan and his visible seed on the earth. (John 15:18-20) The true followers of Christ Jesus are represented in the tribe of Judah, meaning those who

serve and praise Jehovah God. Egypt, in the Bible, pictures Satan's organization or the wicked world out of which the true followers of Christ Jesus must and do come.

Others claim to have come out of the world, and to be followers of Christ Jesus, but the indisputable facts show that many of such are still a part of the world of Satan. The Roman Catholic organization claims to have come out of the world and assumes that position before man and claims to represent God and Christ, but the indisputable facts show that such claims are false and that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy is an integral part of Satan's world. The nominal head of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy is the pope, and the claim is that the first pope was the apostle Peter, and that all other so-called "popes" are the successors of Peter, which claims are absolutely without truth and are directly contradicted by the Scriptures and every fact in history. The apostle Peter was the true and faithful follower of Christ Jesus and he kept himself wholly and entirely separate from the world; whereas every pope of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy has claimed temporal power and has exercised that power, when possible, and has taken a part in the financial and political affairs of this world. The apostle Peter had no successor, and therefore it was impossible for any man to have ever thereafter filled his position. He was never a pope.

The brief statement of facts concerning the development of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy is this: Satan, pursuing his fixed policy of fraud and deceit, and for the purpose of turning men away from God and Christ, set about to build up a religious organi-

zation, named it "Christianity", and uses it for the purpose of deceiving men and reproaching Jehovah. After the death of the twelve apostles of Christ Jesus Satan stealthily and gradually built up an organization or religious system, which has ever since been known as "Christian". Each church or local division of the organization at the beginning and thereafter had its bishop, but by the time the first pope was selected and installed as pope by the Hierarchy there were approximately 1,800 bishops serving different parts of the Catholic organization. The bishop of the organization at Rome was selected as the first pope. Says a well-known authority: "Pope is an ecclesiastical title now used exclusively to designate the head of the Roman Catholic Church. In the fourth and fifth centuries it was frequently used in the West of any bishop; but it gradually came to be reserved to the bishop of Rome, becoming his official title." —*Encyclopedia Britannica,* Volume 22, page 81.

If there were any other evidence required to negative the claim that the pope was a successor of the apostle Peter, the above historical fact would be sufficient for that purpose. For more than 300 years after the death of the apostle Peter there was no pope, but there were many men in the Catholic organization called "bishop". By what authority could any body of men determine that the bishop at Rome should succeed the apostle Peter in office? Who could determine authoritatively which one of the 1,800 self-styled "bishops" was the successor of Peter, if it were possible for Peter to have a successor? Since the apostle Peter was never a pope and never had a successor, it is clear that the claims by the papacy are entirely

false. Such a claim is absurd and without the slightest proof in support thereof. Since the time the Roman Catholic organization started in the pope business, and began to have popes, a vacancy occurs from time to time, and such vacancy in that office is filled by the vote of the college of cardinals by voting into office one of their own number. Men without any authority whatsoever from God or Christ Jesus formed and continue to operate the Roman Catholic system or organization. The father of that organization is Satan the Devil. It is the fruit of the Devil's successful scheme to defraud men and reproach God, and by that organization the Devil has succeeded in blinding millions of honest persons who have been drawn to the Roman Catholic organization and who have been induced to believe that such organization is a servant of Christ, when in fact that organization serves and supports the Devil. Good people who have supported the organization have unwittingly been serving and supporting the Devil's servants. The Hierarchy is the masterpiece of the Devil's organization schemes to defame the name of Jehovah God and Christ Jesus and to turn men away from Jehovah.

HISTORICAL

A brief reference to the history of the Roman Catholic system is here appropriate. From a history written by a man by the name of Lord and called "Old Roman World" the following excerpts are quoted: "*In the First Century* not many wise or noble were called. . . . *In the Second Century* . . . it was a disgrace to be a Christian in the eye of fashion or power. . . . The church . . . was a small body of pure and

blameless men who did not aspire to control society. But they had attracted the notice of the government and were of sufficient consequence to be persecuted." During the second century "bishops had become influential, not in society, but among the Christians". Then "ecclesiastical centralization commenced; . . . The Church was laying the foundation of its future polity and power".

It is certain that the Lord God had not marked out such a policy. It is equally certain that it was the Devil who was planting and cultivating the seeds of selfishness to accomplish his wicked purpose. The historian above mentioned continues: "*The Third Century* saw the Church more powerful as an institution. . . . Doctrines were systematized [into creeds and confusion]. . . . Great bishops ruled the growing church. . . . The Church was rapidly advancing to a position which extorted attention of mankind [of the world, to be sure]. *It was not till the Fourth Century*—when imperial persecution had stopped, when Constantine [the emperor of Pagan Rome] was converted; when the Church was allied with the State, when the early faith was itself corrupted, when superstition and vain philosophy [prompted by the Devil] had entered the ranks of the faithful; . . . when synods were brought under political influence; . . . when politics and dogmatics went hand in hand, . . . that men of rank entered the church. When Christianity became the religion of the court and of the fashionable classes, it was used to support the very evils against which it originally protested. The Church was not only impregnated with the errors of Pagan philosophy, but it adopted many of the ceremonies of oriental [Devil]

worship, . . . The clergy, ambitious and worldly, sought rank and distinction. . . . They became lazy, arrogant and independent. The people were shut out of the government of the church. The bishop became a grand personage who controlled and appointed his clergy. . . . The mission of the [true] Church was lost sight of in a degrading alliance with the State." (Also see *Studies in the Scriptures,* Volume Two, page 284 *et seq.*)

It was at this stage of a degenerate organization of the church called "Christian" that the Roman Catholic system had its birth and beginning by selecting out of the numerous bishops one, to wit, the bishop of Rome, as the first pope. From then till now the Roman Catholic system, otherwise called "the Roman Catholic Hierarchy", has ruled millions of people by means of superstition, fear and false doctrines. The ancient Philistines migrated from Egypt and came into the land of Palestine. Ancient Egypt is repeatedly used in the Scriptures as representing Satan's world or organization. The Christian church began by men coming out from the world and making themselves separate and distinct from the world, that is, out of antitypical Egypt. (Revelation 11:8) By subtlety and fraud Satan planted within the midst of those Christians ambitious men who got control of the organization. Then the organization became corrupt and continued corrupt, and from that time till now every attempt to reform it has failed. Honest men and dishonest ones have been in the church systems, side by side, but in Jehovah's providence the time has come now for those people of honesty and good will to hear and know the truth and to have opportunity to separate themselves from the wicked organi-

zation that defames Jehovah's name and to fully unite themselves with the organization under Christ.

LAND OF JUDAH

When Jehovah led his chosen people, the Israelites, out of Egypt and into the land of Palestine by the hand of Joshua, He caused the land to be divided between the tribes; and to the tribe of Judah was assigned all that land of the south, from the Dead sea to the Mediterranean sea. (Joshua 15:1-47) They found the Philistines already there, who had also come out of Egypt. The land of Palestine divided between the tribes was symbolic. The tribe of Judah stands for those who serve and praise Jehovah God and Christ Jesus. The Lord Jesus Christ is of that tribe, and one of his titles is "The Lion of the tribe of Juda". (Revelation 5:5) Long thereafter one of the popes of Rome assumed that title, and since then he has been wrongfully known as "the Lion of the tribe of Juda". The Philistines, although in the land of Judah, did not serve and praise Jehovah God. Their position would indicate that they should do so, but their course was exactly the contrary. Likewise the Roman Catholic system has assumed the place amongst men of those who are devoted to Jehovah and his King, but that system does not serve Jehovah and his King. It is selfish in the extreme, attempts to control the things of this wicked world, forms a part of this wicked world, and without any question of doubt is the servant of the Devil: "Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?"—Romans 6:16.

Because the Roman Catholic Hierarchy pose before the peoples of earth as the representatives and servants of God, but in fact are the servants of the Devil, they are the grossest hypocrites. The Philistines were ruled by five kings or nobles, and they were held together by means of a confederacy or an agreement between them. The modern Philistines, to wit, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, are a government or rule formed and held together by a confederacy of "patriarchs, metropolitans, archbishops, bishops and priests". (*Shipley*) The members of the Hierarchy are regarded by themselves and others as nobles, similar to the nobles or rulers of the Philistines.

The land which Jehovah promised (by his oath binding that promise) to give to his chosen people is his kingdom under his beloved Son, Christ Jesus. (Genesis 13:15; 17:8; Luke 22:29, 30) The Philistines were in the land before God's chosen people arrived there. Likewise the modern Philistines, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, occupied the place or condition claimed by them as a divine provision for that organization, before God's faithful ones are taken out of the world and anointed of the Lord. Jehovah declared that he left the Philistines in the land of Palestine to prove his chosen people. "Now these are the nations which the Lord left, to prove Israel by them; even as many of Israel as had not known all the wars of Canaan; namely, five lords of the Philistines, and all the Canaanites, and the Sidonians, and the Hivites that dwelt in mount Lebanon, from mount Baal-hermon unto the entering in of Hamath. And they were to prove Israel by them, to know whether they would hearken unto the commandments of the

Lord, which he commanded their fathers by the hand of Moses."—Judges 3:1, 3, 4.

Likewise Jehovah has permitted the Roman Catholic Hierarchy organization to occupy the place wherein they claim to represent God until he selected and anointed his people, and in order that he might prove that his people love God and prove it by unselfish obedience to his commandments under stress. These faithful ones maintain their integrity toward Jehovah, and they must do it in the face of wicked opposition.

As further evidence that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy have assumed the place that properly belongs to the Judeans or those who truly praise and serve Jehovah, note that the claim is made that the bishop of Rome, otherwise called "the pope", is the vicegerent of Christ. The claim of that institution is that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy is a divine institution and that it is a counterpart of the heavenly organization of Jehovah God: "At the council of Trent, in which anathema is pronounced upon all who deny the existence within the Catholic church of a hierarchy instituted by divine appointment."—*Encyclopedia Britannica,* Volume 13, page 453.

It is the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, the modern Philistines, that claim infallibility for the pope. Such infallibility, however, was not openly claimed until A.D. 1870. Thus it is seen that the Devil stealthily and subtly led the people by fraud and deceit into a position where they might be induced to believe that a man is infallible in matters pertaining to the course of life that men should follow. This claim is made in the face of the inspired Word of Jehovah God, which says that all men are born in sin and shapen

in iniquity; which includes the pope. (Romans 5:12; Psalm 51:5) Does it not seem strange that a period of 1,800 years was required by the Catholic organization to reach the conclusion of the infallibility of its head? A pronouncement by the Vatican Council says: "We teach and define as a divinely revealed dogma, that the Roman Pontiff, when he speaks *ex cathedra*—i.e. when, in his character as Pastor and Doctor of all Christians, and in virtue of his supreme apostolic authority, he lays down that a certain doctrine concerning faith or morals is binding upon the universal Church,—possesses, by the Divine assistance which was promised to him in the person of the blessed Saint Peter, that same infallibility with which the Divine Redeemer thought fit to endow His Church, to define its doctrine with regard to faith and morals; and, consequently, that these definitions of the Roman Pontiff are irreformable in themselves, and not in consequence of the consent of the Church."—*Encyclopedia Britannica,* Volume 14, page 511.

Not one word is found in the Scriptures to warrant any such conclusion by any man or body of men as above stated. Thus it is seen that a small body of self-constituted rulers set up their own doctrines contrary to and in defiance of the inspired Word of Jehovah God. By this means they induce millions of people to believe the doctrines of the Roman Catholic church, and they take away from them the Bible so they cannot learn the truth.

DEVIL'S REPRESENTATIVES

That the ancient Philistines were the representatives of the Devil there is not the slightest doubt in

the mind of anyone who believes the Bible is God's Word. The Philistines practiced the Devil religion. Their national god or deity was Dagon, the fish-god. When the Philistines seized the ark of Jehovah's covenant, and carried it away to their own place, Jehovah expressed his anger against the Philistines, as it is written: "And the Philistines took the ark of God, and brought it from Eben-ezer unto Ashdod. When the Philistines took the ark of God, they brought it into the house of Dagon, and set it by Dagon. And when they of Ashdod arose early on the morrow, behold, Dagon was fallen upon his face to the earth before the ark of the LORD. And they took Dagon, and set him in his place again. And when they arose early on the morrow morning, behold, Dagon was fallen upon his face to the ground before the ark of the Lord; and the head of Dagon and both the palms of his hands were cut off upon the threshold: only the stump of Dagon was left to him. Therefore neither the priests of Dagon, nor any that come into Dagon's house, tread on the threshold of Dagon in Ashdod unto this day. But the hand of the Lord was heavy upon them of Ashdod; and he destroyed them, and smote them with emerods, even Ashdod, and the coasts thereof. And when the men of Ashdod saw that it was so, they said, The ark of the God of Israel shall not abide with us: for his hand is sore upon us, and upon Dagon our god. They sent, therefore, and gathered all the lords of the Philistines unto them, and said, What shall we do with the ark of the God of Israel? And they answered, Let the ark of the God of Israel be carried about unto Gath. And they carried the ark of the God of Israel about thither. And

it was so, that, after they had carried it about, the hand of the Lord was against the city with a very great destruction; and he smote the men of the city, both small and great, and they had emerods in their secret parts." (1 Samuel 5:1-9) The Philistines were offering sacrifice unto their Devil-god Dagon at the time Samson pulled down the building upon them, killing thousands.

Jehovah caused these facts to be written and recorded in the Scriptures for the purpose of foreshadowing the modern-day enemies of his people. (1 Corinthians 10:11; Hebrews 10:1) The Philistines were the mortal enemies of Jehovah's chosen people, the Israelites, and therefore foreshadowed the mortal enemies of Jehovah's witnesses now on the earth. The chiefest among such enemies, who hypocritically claim to represent God, are those of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. The Philistines caused their fish-god to wear a miter showing that his chief or head was the Devil, whom he represented amongst the Philistines. When the pope, the head of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, sits on the high altar of Rome to receive adulation he wears a miter identical with that worn by the fish-god Dagon. Thus the pope shows by this symbol what god he represents in fact. The following historical fact is cited in support of the foregoing:

"As the pope bears the key of Janus, so he wears the mitre of Dagon. The excavations of Nineveh have put this beyond all possibility of doubt. The Papal mitre is entirely different from the mitre of Aaron and the Jewish high priests. That mitre was a turban. The two-horned mitre, which the Pope wears, when he sits on the high altar at Rome and receives the

adoration of the Cardinals, is the very mitre worn by Dagon, the fish-god of the Philistines and Babylonians. . . . The gaping jaws of the fish surmounting the head of the man at Nineveh are the unmistakable counterpart of the horns of the Pope's mitre at Rome." —Hislop's *The Two Babylons,* page 215.

There can be no doubt that Dagon the visible god of the ancient Philistines foreshadowed the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, of which the pope is chief. The Scriptural and the historical evidence fully agree upon this point. The miter similar to that worn by the fish-god Dagon, and by the pope, is also worn by other bishops of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. This further supports the conclusion that the Philistines foreshadowed the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. Manifestly the Lord is now revealing to those who love him these facts that they may have a proper vision of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy and know for a certainty what fate awaits the enemies that now reproach Jehovah's name and persecute his anointed ones.

DOMINION

The Philistines had dominion over Israel, due to the fact that the Israelites had been unfaithful to their covenant. (Judges 13:1; 14:1, 4) There were few exceptions amongst the Israelites, such as Gideon, Samson and others, which men were faithful and true to Jehovah God. Due to the fact that almost all professed Christians during the past 1,800 years have been unfaithful to God, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy has had dominion over "Christendom" in matters pertaining to religion, politics and commerce.

The Roman Catholic Hierarchy claims the right and power to control and rule the world, and it exercises this rule over almost all of "Christendom". The faithful amongst the Israelites, such as Gideon, Samson, Samuel, and David, represented the anointed and faithful followers of Christ Jesus now on the earth, and who refuse to bow to the dictates or rules of the modern Philistines.

For centuries the Roman Catholic organization has claimed the divine right to rule the nations of the earth, and based upon such false claim that wicked organization has attempted to control the political affairs of all the nations of earth. Its rise to temporal power began in the sixth century, and it continued to increase and to exercise that power for a thousand years. The Roman Catholic organization falsely claims that the thousand years of its "successful" reign is the thousand years mentioned in Revelation the twentieth chapter, when Christ and his saints reign, and that the period of time from 1800 down to the present time is the "little season" mentioned in the same chapter of Revelation. Of course, their claim is false. But that "little season" will end in the destruction of the Devil and his agents. The end and destruction of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy is near at hand.

For many centuries the Hierarchy, acting by its official head the pope, claims the right to crown and unseat kings and to generally dictate the policy of the governments of the earth. Otherwise stated, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy seeks to be an absolute dictator in utter disregard of the rights of the people. Today in every nation where a dictator exists and

rules it is the Hierarchy that is behind the dictator and in fact dictating the policy of such government.

PERSECUTION

The Philistines were the oppressors and persecutors of the Israelites who were of God's chosen people. In the days of Samson, Eli and Samuel the Philistines attempted to get all the "milk and honey" of the land of Palestine. Likewise for centuries the Roman Catholic organization has attempted to get all the riches and sweetness of the earth. It is a noticeable fact that they have selected the most beautiful spots on earth to erect their buildings and places of official action. The Philistines oppressed the Israelites for many years. They imprisoned Samson and put out his eyes. They fought against the Israelites time and again and tried to destroy David when he was anointed and installed as king of Israel. Likewise the Roman Catholic Hierarchy organization at all times has oppressed and persecuted the followers of Christ Jesus, and now centers its persecution upon Jehovah's witnesses. The pages of history covering a period of approximately 1,500 years record many of the most wicked deeds committed by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, and which deeds and crimes find no parallel in any other organization ever on the earth. Reference here is made to only a few of the terrible crimes committed by the Hierarchy and its agents, and the purpose of citing even such is to show that the Hierarchy is the antitype of the Philistines, and the relation that the Hierarchy bears to Jehovah's witnesses.

The Philistines enriched themselves by laying tribute and other burdens upon the Israelites. For many centuries the Roman Catholic Hierarchy has enriched itself by laying grievous burdens upon the people of all nations of "Christendom". For many years that hypocritical organization has engaged in the collection of money tribute from the dupes of the Catholic organization. Hooded female agents, garbed like black birds of prey, make regular visits to the many factories and offices on payday and collect, from the fearful and superstitious, money which the laborers so much need for the support of themselves and their families. Thus by the practice of fraud and deceit millions of dollars are extracted from the pockets of the people, and particularly those of the needy, and this money is used to enrich the Hierarchy and to satisfy the beastly desires of wicked and selfish men.

Tribute money is collected from the living, whose friends have died, and this upon the pretext that some priest of the Catholic organization may utter a prayer for the dead and thus benefit the dead. Such is an oppressive fraud practiced upon the superstitious and fearful. The Scriptures, without exception, teach that those who die are no longer alive, but are dead, unconscious and "know not any thing"; that none of the dead are in purgatory or in torment; and the claim that men may utter prayers in behalf of the dead and render them benefit is wholly false and fraudulent and is a great burden and oppression to trustful people. For many years tribute money has been collected from the people of the nations of "Christendom" and sent to the Vatican at Rome to fill the

coffers of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, and this has been greatly to the oppression and detriment of the people. In Mexico alone for many years the Hierarchy extracted from the pockets of the common people annually thirty million dollars, which money was sent to the treasurer of the Hierarchy at Rome. It was in Mexico where an agent of the Catholic organization compelled the natives to build in one small town many so-called "church buildings" and there installed priests of the Hierarchy that they might collect from the poor natives practically all they earned. The ancient Philistines attempted to get all the riches of the Israelites; and likewise the modern Philistines attempt to get and control all the riches of the world called "Christendom".

INQUISITION

The followers of Christ Jesus were persecuted to some extent by Pagan Rome. But such persecution did not begin to compare with the wicked persecution of Christians by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, or what is otherwise known as "Papal Rome". The Roman Catholic Hierarchy instituted and prosecuted a system of fiendish persecution, the like of which was never before known, and there has been nothing to compare with it since. The doctrines promulgated and taught by selfish men, and which originated with the Devil, were entirely contrary to the truth as taught by Christ Jesus and the prophets of Jehovah, and yet these false doctrines were thrust upon the people. The Roman Catholic organization, claiming the sole right to determine what the people should hear and believe, has kept the Bible away from the common people and

compelled them to hear and to believe the false doctrines based upon superstition and fear, which are taught by men. This wicked organization has induced millions of people to utter the name of Christ but at the same time to believe and follow the precepts of men. Therefore God has recorded in his Word: "Wherefore the Lord said, Forasmuch as this people draw near me with their mouth, and with their lips do honour me, but have removed their heart far from me, and their fear toward me is taught by the precept of men: therefore, behold, I will proceed to do a marvellous work among this people, even a marvellous work and a wonder."—Isaiah 29:13, 14.

If anyone dared to express his opinion contrary to the doctrines taught by the clergy of the Roman Catholic organization, that one was straightway charged with heresy. Early in the eleventh century many persons charged with heresy because they dared hold or express an opinion contrary to the Roman Catholic organization were executed by burning or strangling.

The Inquisition was instituted for the purpose of detecting and punishing all persons guilty of any offense against the Roman Catholic orthodoxy. By the time of the thirteenth century it was in full sway. Popes appointed commissioners who traveled from place to place, spying out the people. Arriving in a district, those commissioners called upon the people to confess if they were heretics or to denounce those whom they believed to be heretics, and many were arrested and punished merely upon such denunciation. The bishops assumed the responsibility of providing the prisons and other means of punishment.

Cruel torture was employed to force confessions from persons charged with heresy. All manner of fiendish instruments were employed in such torture. The following were some of the means of torture employed: The victim's feet were seared with red-hot irons; he was required to put on an iron boot which was poured full of red-hot lead; the body of the victim was placed in a machine that pulled his joints out of place; others were placed under a machine containing knives and the victims were slowly cut in pieces. Any lawyer who dared to appear in defense of a person charged with heresy was himself held guilty of the crime of heresy, and thus the victims were without any means of defense or aid. The Inquisition was prosecuted with malice and vigor in Italy, Spain, the Balkan States, Ireland, England, Germany, France, Mexico, Cuba, and, in fact, in almost all countries known as "Christendom".

Two features of the Inquisition stand out prominently, to wit: Prosecution for speech, and suppression and destruction of books. The manifest purpose of such prosecution and the destruction of books was and is to keep the people in ignorance and to hide from them the frauds of the Roman Catholic organization. Says the historian: "All books had to pass through the hands of the bishops" for the purpose of deleting anything that might appear to be against the Roman Catholic organization. That organization then would not permit anything to be published that might "shock their religious susceptibilities", and they still continue to raise the same cry. Every crime known to the criminal calendar was committed by the leaders of the Inquisition. The common people were kept at

all times in fear and dread. Many of them were forced to denounce their neighbors and cause their execution, hoping thereby to save themselves from the wrath of the Hierarchy's inquisition. It was not possible for the people to gain any knowledge concerning Jehovah and his gracious provision for the human race, because the modern Philistines, the Catholic Hierarchy, prevented them from gaining such knowledge. No books bearing upon the Scriptures were permitted to get into the hands of the people. (See *Encyclopedia Britannica*—"Inquisition.") The gross and flagrant crimes of the Hierarchy and its agents had somewhat of a setback about the year 1800, and thereafter the Hierarchy adopted a more refined method of the commission of crime. To this very day that wicked institution continues to suppress the publication of books that teach the truth of God's Word, and causes many of such books to be burned, and this is particularly true with reference to the books published by the WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY. The common people that have been induced to support the Catholic organization are forbidden by the priests to read such books explaining the truth of God's Word. All organizations that have ever been on earth have not done as much as the Roman Catholic organization to oppress the people and to keep them in ignorance of God's Word. That organization, therefore, constitutes the worst visible enemies of God and his anointed people. They now harass, persecute and imprison those who teach the truth, and they do this out of spite.

The Philistines were "soothsayers". (Isaiah 2:6) That means that they were the practicers of Devil religion. Likewise the Roman Catholic system is made

up of soothsayers. The following prophecy specifically applies to them: "Their land [the position they occupy amongst men] also is full of idols; they worship the work of their own hands, that which their own fingers have made [thus, as a means of obtaining revenue, they induce the common people to buy their images, to use these in their worship]: and the mean man boweth down, and the great man humbleth himself."—Isaiah 2:8, 9.

In the Catholic organization the meanest man bows before the Catholic prelate, even as the Lord foretold. Even at this day the Roman Catholic Hierarchy cause to be exhibited upon the screens at the theaters moving pictures showing Roman Catholic priests performing senseless ceremonies, claiming thereby to bless automobiles and thus prevent accidents to the riders therein, and this regardless of how bad the riders or drivers might be. This also furnishes the Hierarchy a means of fraudulently obtaining money by playing upon the credulity of a fearful and superstitious people. The foregoing is a statement of a few of the wicked deeds and crimes of the Hierarchy, and such is the crowd that claims to be the divine successor of the apostle Peter. Surely when the people know the truth they will separate themselves completely from such hypocrites.

POLITICAL

The Philistines were in a political confederacy that carried on wars of conquest for the avowed purpose of controlling and ruling the people. Likewise the Roman Catholic organization, the modern Philistines, while operating fraudulently and falsely under the name of Christ, is a confederacy of selfish men or-

ganized and carried on purely for political and financial and other selfish purposes. The political agents of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy operate in every nation of earth. That wicked organization dominates the political offices of all the nations of "Christendom". Heretofore the Hierarchy has found it rather difficult to get control of the United States, but at the present time it is making more progress in that way. Otherwise stated, the American republic, which is supposed to be a free nation, is now practically under the domination of a foreign power, and that foreign power is the modern Philistines, and has its main office of operation at Vatican City, Rome. Take notice of some of the historical facts that now follow:

In the seventeenth century the Roman Catholic organization gained a real foothold on the American Continent by the founding of the province of Maryland by the family of Lord Baltimore. Today it is the strongest political organization in America. Its *Official Directory of 1935,* a book containing more than a thousand pages, a book that is ten and one-half by seven inches, is filled merely with the record of the officers of the Hierarchy and its agents. The covetous ambition of that organization has been to get complete control of the United States. On September 26, 1900, a federation of all Catholic societies in America was formed, to wit, "for the avowed purpose of influencing legislation and securing what the Catholics claim are their rights" in America.

"At the annual meeting of the Catholic Young Men's National Union in Brooklyn, September 26, a resolution was adopted to form a great federation of all the societies of the Roman Catholic church in the

United States for political purposes. Last spring Bishop McFaul of Trenton, N. J., told the Ancient Order of Hibernians that the Roman Catholics of America were fools not to organize into one solid mass and make their power felt in the politics of this country; there were 2,000,000 Roman Catholic voters, and if they were united for political action they could make this country a Roman Catholic nation.

"This federation has now been formed by the following societies: The Knights of Columbus, the Knights of St. John, the Catholic Benevolent Legion, the Ancient Order of Hibernians, the Irish Catholic Benevolent Union, the Irish-American Societies, the German-American Societies, the Catholic Knights of America, the Catholic Total Abstinence Union of America; . . . Besides these organizations there are scores of others of less prominence.

"The federation is formed for the avowed purpose of influencing legislation and securing what the Catholics claim are their rights.

"The convention, which met in the Park Theater, Brooklyn, was the largest gathering in the history of the Young Men's National Union, and it was addressed by leading priests and laymen from all parts of the country. . . . The convention unanimously approved the plan of federation and appointed committees to carry it into effect. By this means tens of thousands of men of the Catholic faith will be brought under one national head, and this stalwart body of men will have a strong influence on national legislation." —Brooklyn *Eagle*.

"Having possession of the cities, the Romanists now reach out to gain control in national affairs. 'We must

make America Catholic,' said Archbishop Ireland at the hundredth anniversary of the establishment of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy in the United States, which was held in Baltimore, November 10, 1889. 'We must make America Catholic. As we love our church, it suffices to mention the work and our cry shall be, God wills it, and our hearts shall leap towards it with Crusader enthusiasm.' . . . 'Why should we fear or hesitate?' he continued, with glowing fervor and proud boasting. 'We number ten millions—a powerful army if the forces be well marshaled and their latent strength be brought into action. Catholics in America are loyal to their church and devoted to her leaders. Their labors and their victories in the first century of their history show what they are capable of in the coming century, when they are conscious of their power and are under complete hierarchical organization.' "—*The Converted Catholic* of New York.

Says *The National Catholic Register:* "It is God's plan that the Holy Father of Rome should be the temporal and spiritual head of his kingdom on earth." Like the ancient Philistines, this is a bold claim by the Hierarchy of the position or the place of "Judea", which properly is the place of those who truly worship and serve Jehovah God and Christ Jesus. The president of the United States, in 1916, made one Tumulty, a Roman Catholic Knight of Columbus, his private secretary, concerning which *The National Catholic Register* said: "Next to the President . . . Tumulty . . . wields the greatest political power of any man in America." It was under the administration of President Wilson and Tumulty that Jehovah's witnesses were sentenced to eighty years' imprisonment for tell-

ing the truth, and the agents of the Hierarchy brought about that result.

Franklin D. Roosevelt was elected president in 1932. His campaign manager, and now his chief cabinet officer, is a Roman Catholic, more interested in the Hierarchy than in the peoples of America. In the Roosevelt political organization there are more Catholics than of any other professed religion. In April, 1933, the pope inaugurated the so-called "holy year", which received the endorsement of the president of the United States and his official family. The Roman Catholic organization for the past few years has carried forward a campaign of wicked libel and slander against Jehovah's witnesses, attempting to drive them from the radio and thus prevent the people from hearing the truth. A petition of two and one-half million American citizens was filed with the government, demanding that the government use measures to prevent this unwarranted interference with the people's receiving the truth. But the Roosevelt administration refused to do anything. Persecution of Jehovah's witnesses by the Hierarchy increases, and many harmless men and women are imprisoned because they bear testimony to the Word of God.

On March 8, 1934, the New York *Sun* published a special dispatch from Rome reporting that 'a definite agreement had been reached between President Roosevelt and the Vatican to the effect that diplomatic relations shall be established between the United States and the Holy See as soon as public opinion in America might be brought around to it'. In other words, the president of the United States agreed to support the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, a foreign power, and to

openly do so as soon as the public could be blinded enough to come around to it. The Hierarchy then pushed its campaign to bring the American people around to this very point. On March 17, 1935, there was a mobilization of all Catholic Societies in America, representing every state in the Union, the announced purpose of which is to educate the American people to submit to political, diplomatic relationship between the Vatican and the United States, that is, to receive political ambassadors of the Vatican at American political councils at Washington. The foreign power, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy organization, already maintains at Washington an "apostolic delegate". Says the *Official Catholic Directory for 1935:* "The apostolic delegate to the United States is Amleto Giovanni Cicognani, born in Italy February 24, 1883, . . . appointed apostolic delegate to the United States and Titular Archbishop of Laodicea, March 17, 1933"; that is to say, after Mr. Roosevelt became the president.

At the instance of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy Jehovah's witnesses are now being cruelly persecuted in all parts of "Christendom", and particularly in Austria, Germany, Estonia, Quebec and New Jersey. In the above-mentioned foreign countries books of the WATCH TOWER SOCIETY, because they explain the Bible, have been seized and destroyed, and many of Jehovah's witnesses, the true followers of Christ Jesus, are charged with "seditious conspiracy" and thrown into prison because they had in possession or distributed such books, and all this wicked persecution of faithful witnesses of Jehovah is done by those who claim to be the "successors of the apostle Peter" and the official representatives of God and Christ on earth.

Amazing hypocrisy! This persecution the modern Philistines carry on against Jehovah's witnesses "by revenge" and "with a despiteful heart" and "hatred", exactly as the ancient Philistines did against God's chosen people in Palestine.—Ezekiel 25:15.

"AGREEMENT WITH HELL"

Although the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, the modern Philistines, have induced millions of people to believe that such institution represents God and Christ on earth, yet that wicked organization proceeds exactly contrary to the Word of God. Jehovah's prophets warned the peoples of earth concerning the day of Armageddon and what great destruction the Lord will bring upon the wicked at that time. The Hierarchy, with pious face and sanctimonious words, harangue the people and claim that these prophecies concerning Armageddon are not true, and especially with reference to the Catholic organization. As an example the *Catholic Freeman's Journal* of May 1935, published at Sydney, Australia, says concerning these prophets and of Jehovah's witnesses: "The burden of their message is that all political and ecclesiastical organizations are under the control of Satan, Catholics being the more under the diabolical thumb than Protestants; that God is about to smite the lot, Catholic and Protestant; to escape ultimate annihilation men have to become Jehovah's witnesses. . . . I could scarcely blame the people if they preferred ultimate annihilation. However, there is no need to choose either; in fact ultimate annihilation is an impossibility."

The prophecies of Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel and Amos concerning the Philistines were written long

after the ancient Philistines, as a nation, were destroyed; which is conclusive proof that those prophecies refer to the people whom the ancient Philistines foreshadowed or pictured. The overwhelming evidence shows that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy exactly fits the picture made by the ancient Philistines; otherwise stated, the Hierarchy constitutes the modern Philistines. Pretending to have come out of the world and onto the side of the Lord, and to be consecrated to God and Christ Jesus, they are in fact assuming the false position or place of the followers of Christ Jesus who are hence symbolically in the "land of Judah".

Circumcision, as used under the law of God, is a symbol of full consecration and devotion to Jehovah. The Scriptures frequently denounce in terms of contempt the Philistines as "the uncircumcised". (See Judges 14:3; 15:18; 1 Samuel 14:6; 17:26; 2 Samuel 1:20.) This is proof that the Philistines pictured a class of people or organization doomed to disgrace. The Philistines furthermore pictured a class marked for disgrace, in this, that God smote the Philistines with a disease of emerods, which in modern language means hemorrhoids, that is to say, tumors in the hinder parts. "And it was so, that, after they had carried it about, the hand of the Lord was against the city with a very great destruction; and he smote the men of the city, both small and great, and they had emerods in their secret parts. [(*Septuagint* and *Vulgate*) And the men of Gath (consulted together and) made themselves seats (of skins).]"—1 Samuel 5:9.

The uncircumcised Philistines wanted to keep the Israelites in subjection in order to get pecuniary gain. The modern uncircumcised Philistines, the Roman

Catholic organization, wants to destroy God's people and keep all the other people in subjection in order to reap pecuniary gain.

The claim that the pope is the successor of the apostle Peter is false as the Devil himself. Christ Jesus says: "My kingdom is not of this world." The Roman Catholic Hierarchy says, "It is our right to rule and control this world." Jesus said that Satan is the ruler or invisible prince of this world, and this shows that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy is the agent of Satan. (John 12:31; 2 Corinthians 4:4) The Roman Catholic Hierarchy not only is a friend of the world of Satan, but forms an integral part thereof, and for that reason alone that wicked organization could not represent God, but is in fact God's enemy. The words of the apostle James specifically apply to that wicked organization: "Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God." (James 4:4) 'Adultery,' as used in this text, means illicit relationship between church and state, by men of an organization who claim to represent God and who at the same time are consorting with and forming a part of the wicked political world. That the Roman Catholic Hierarchy constitutes the modern Philistines, and is the chief enemy of God and his kingdom, there is not the slightest doubt, and God's promise is that by the hand of the antitypical David, Christ Jesus, He will save his people out of the hands of these enemies. (2 Samuel 3:18) What, then, is the fate or complete end of the modern Philistines? This question is now of greatest importance to all who love Jehovah.

Jehovah permitted the Philistines to remain in the land of Judah in order to put the Israelites to a test. The Philistines, therefore, were used by Jehovah to make a picture concerning a greater test that would come upon his chosen people, looking to the vindication of his name. Likewise God permitted Satan to continue on earth after being sentenced to death, that a witness might be given to His name on the earth and that Jehovah might in due time exhibit his supreme power to the vindication of his name. (Exodus 9:16) For the same reason Jehovah has permitted the modern Philistines, the Roman Catholic organization called "Christian", to assume the place properly assigned to those who are devoted to him, and permitted that unholy organization to persecute his people in order that his anointed and devoted ones might prove their integrity toward him, and at the same time give a witness to the people concerning God's name.

In these last days of peril Jehovah has made all needed provision to comfort his people and to strengthen their hope, and from time to time he unfolds his prophecies to them for this very purpose. Jehovah and Christ Jesus are now the teachers of those who have devoted themselves to him and his kingdom, and these devoted ones need no man to teach them. (Isaiah 30:20) To his faithful witnesses Jehovah has given his promise: "And it shall come to pass, that before they call, I will answer; and while they are yet speaking, I will hear." (Isaiah 65:24) True to his promise, Jehovah is now showing his people what the prophecy concerning the Philistines means. In this hour of great stress, when the enemy is cruelly persecuting God's people on earth, it is a great consolation to have Jehovah

inform them as to why he permits such persecution, and what will be the final result. As God's faithful people study and consider these prophecies concerning the Philistines, both ancient and modern, they will receive great comfort, and it at once becomes the privilege and duty of each one who does receive such comfort to carry that message of consolation to others who desire to be comforted. (2 Corinthians 1:3-5) It seems certain that there are millions of persons of good will now under the dominating influence of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, as well as others, whose eyes must be opened, and that these will become a part of the "great multitude" called "Jonadabs". —Revelation 7:9-17.

Jehovah has made it plain that he will locate all his enemies and render unto them a just recompense for all the wickedness committed by them: "Thine hand shall find out all thine enemies: thy right hand shall find out those that hate thee. Thou shalt make them as a fiery oven in the time of thine anger: the Lord shall swallow them up in his wrath, and the fire shall devour them. Their fruit shalt thou destroy from the earth, and their seed from among the children of men. For they intended evil against thee; they imagined a mischievous device, which they are not able to perform."—Psalm 21:8-11.

The evidence herein submitted conclusively shows that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy is the chief enemy on earth of God and of his anointed people, and that the ancient Philistines and their relationship with the Israelites foreshadowed this very thing. In the prophecy concerning the conspiracy to cut off his people from being a nation the Philistines are specifi-

cally named by the Lord as being in that conspiracy. (Psalm 83:7) At Isaiah 28:21 it is written: "For the Lord shall rise up as in mount Perazim, he shall be wroth as in the valley of Gibeon, that he may do his work, his strange work; and bring to pass his act, his strange act." The context clearly proves that the fulfillment of this prophecy takes place after Christ Jesus is enthroned and comes to the temple of Jehovah for judgment.

The Roman Catholic Hierarchy, and all those religionists who now willingly take their stand with that wicked organization and against God's anointed, are the ones who claim to have made a covenant with death and hell to the end that the "gates of hell" cannot prevail against that organization. It is that religious-political institution that claims that there is no such thing as death, but that all persons at death go either to purgatory or to torment. Further, the Roman Catholic system claims to be a divine institution and that those who are Catholics are not subjected to the denunciation uttered by Jehovah against the wicked. Those claims are, of course, false. Jesus used these words: "And the gates of hell shall not prevail against it." (Matthew 16:18) The Roman Catholic Hierarchy has seized upon these words and misapplied them in its effort to prove that the Catholic institution shall stand forever. The above-quoted words of Jesus are not subject to any such construction, and it is apparent that the Catholic claim of the meaning of such words is wholly false and finds no foundation whatsoever in truth. As set out in chapter five, the meaning of the words of Jesus above quoted is: That Christ Jesus himself, and not the apostle

Peter, is the one referred to as the Rock, and that the church of God, of which Christ is Head, is the church mentioned, and not the Catholic church.

When the people are told of Jehovah's purpose to destroy Satan's organization, both visible and invisible, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy says: "Those scriptures do not apply to us, because we have made a covenant with death and with hell and are at agreement therewith. Hell cannot prevail against us." Now, in view of the facts, which cannot be controverted, we can see why Jehovah caused his prophet to write to the modern Philistines, the Roman Catholic organization that is controlled and dominated by scornful men, the following words of the prophecy, to wit: "Wherefore hear the word of the Lord, ye scornful men, that rule this people which is in Jerusalem ['Christendom']: Because ye have said, We have made a covenant with death, and with hell are we at agreement; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, it shall not come unto us: for we have made lies our refuge, and under falsehood have we hid ourselves." (Isaiah 28:14, 15) Thus the Lord declares that the modern Philistine organization is the offspring of Satan. The fifteenth verse of the foregoing prophecy states exactly what the Roman Catholic Hierarchy claims for itself. The refuge or hiding place of the entire Roman Catholic scheme is, as God states, a great mass of lies. Is it the purpose of Jehovah God to destroy that refuge of lies, and if so, when?

Jehovah by his prophet answers that question in the very next verse, to wit: "Therefore thus saith the Lord God, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure

foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste." (Isaiah 28:16) The words of this verse are addressed to his faithful anointed ones, who fully trust in and serve Jehovah. These are told that if they are devoted to God they need not make haste, not be unduly excited and disposed to run ahead of the Lord, but to wait upon the Lord, that in due time he will act, and his action in this behalf will take place after he has laid in Zion his Stone, the precious Corner Stone, the Sure Foundation, that is to say, Christ Jesus the King enthroned, and then he will take positive and unequivocal action against the liars. It was in 1918 that Jehovah laid in his royal organization the Chief Corner Stone and Foundation Stone, Christ Jesus. It was then that he builded up Zion, placing that precious Stone, Christ Jesus, his enthroned King, at the head; that is the same great and mighty precious Stone, the King, that becomes the 'stumbling stone' to all those hypocritical pretenders, the religionists. (Isaiah 8:14, 15) The chief amongst these hypocritical ones who claim to serve Jehovah God, and who in fact serve the Devil, is the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. The laying of this Corner Stone fixes the time when the Lord would begin to take account with that wicked institution.

Jehovah foretold that the hypocritical religious organizations would reject Christ as King, and that such rejection would be particularly marked at the time The Stone was laid in the building up of Zion. "The stone which the builders refused is become the head stone of the corner." (Psalm 118:22, 23) Jesus quoted this Psalm and applied it to the pretenders. (Matthew 21:42) The fulfillment of this prophecy takes

place in the day of Jehovah, the day which Jehovah has made, the beginning of which is the setting his King upon his throne, in A.D. 1914, and sending him to the temple for judgment. The incontrovertible proof is that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy has rejected Christ the King of the world. Although claiming to be the representative of God and Christ on earth, when Christ Jesus the King comes to the temple the Roman Catholic Hierarchy not only refuses to accept him as King but continues to insist that it is the divine right of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy to rule the nations of the earth. Jehovah sends forth his witnesses to make known to the nations that he is God, that Christ is King, and that the kingdom is here; and the Roman Catholic Hierarchy violently oppose the message and the messengers, and induce the other political rulers of the world to join with them in the persecution of Jehovah's messengers. They enter into a conspiracy to destroy all those who are for Jehovah and his King, and to thus prevent the anointed of God from becoming a part of his kingdom. (Psalm 2:2, 3) "They have consulted together with one consent: they are confederate against thee," says the prophet; and then in that same prophecy the Lord specifically names the Philistines and those associated with them as being in the conspiracy to resist the kingdom under Christ Jesus. (Psalm 83.2-7) The Roman Catholic Hierarchy specifically denies that Christ shall rule the world, but insists that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy shall rule; and this is another great lie.

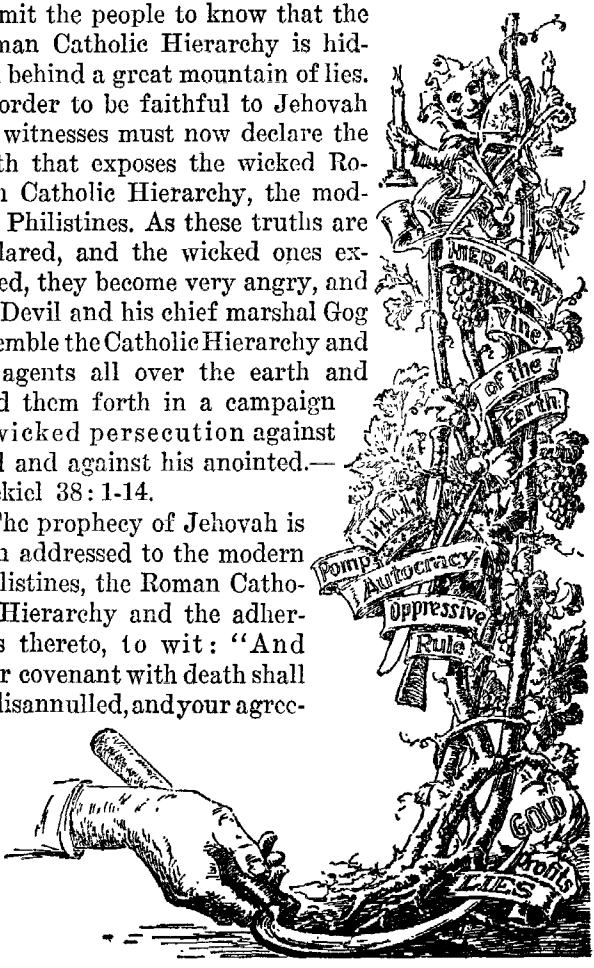
In the prophecy of Isaiah Jehovah definitely fixes the time for the fulfillment of his judgment. The com-

ing of the Lord to the temple for judgment was in 1918, and judgment began with the house of God and thereafter follows upon other institutions. (Malachi 3:1-3; Matthew 24:31-40) To the statement of the modern Philistines, as set forth in Isaiah 28:15, that "we have made lies our refuge, and under falsehood have we hid ourselves", Jehovah answers in these words, to wit: "Judgment also will I lay to the line, and righteousness to the plummet; and the hail shall sweep away the refuge of lies, and the waters shall overflow the hiding place." (Isaiah 28:17) At the judgment of the house of God the approved ones are anointed, given the name of Jehovah, and sent forth as his witnesses to declare the day of the vengeance of our God. (1 Peter 4:17; Isaiah 43:9-12; 61:1, 2) This is God's time for causing the truth concerning himself and his kingdom to be declared, and his message of truth is like a great hailstorm, which tears off the vail and sweeps away the refuge or hiding place of lies, and fully exposes the hiding place thereof to the plain view of honest people.—Revelation 16:21; Exodus 9:22-26.

During the past few years Jehovah's witnesses have, by the Lord's grace, been doing this very work under the direction and commandment of the Lord. If these witnesses were declaring these things merely to do injury to others, that would be contrary to the will of God; but they are declaring these divine truths because it is the time when God has afforded the people the opportunity to know that he is the only true God, that Christ is King, and that the Kingdom is the only hope of the world, and that it is in vain for man to put his trust in imperfect men or organiza-

tions. It is the time when God will permit the people to know that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy is hidden behind a great mountain of lies. In order to be faithful to Jehovah his witnesses must now declare the truth that exposes the wicked Roman Catholic Hierarchy, the modern Philistines. As these truths are declared, and the wicked ones exposed, they become very angry, and the Devil and his chief marshal Gog assemble the Catholic Hierarchy and its agents all over the earth and send them forth in a campaign of wicked persecution against God and against his anointed.—Ezekiel 38: 1-14.

The prophecy of Jehovah is then addressed to the modern Philistines, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy and the adherents thereto, to wit: "And your covenant with death shall be disannulled, and your agree-



ment with hell shall not stand; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, then ye shall be trodden down by it." (Isaiah 28:18) This positive declaration of Jehovah is that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy has made with death and hell a covenant which shall not stand but shall fail, and that he will bring upon that institution a great scourge that will expose them and destroy them and that institution shall be completely annihilated. From the time the message of God's vengeance goes forth against the hypocritical organization that message constitutes a great vexation to them. Why is it that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, in every country, is bitterly opposing Jehovah's message of the kingdom? The answer is, because that devilish institution is vexed at the message of God's Word, which is being declared by his witnesses and which exposes its very hiding place, which is the great mountain of lies: "From the time that it goeth forth it shall take you: for morning by morning shall it pass over, by day and by night: and it shall be a vexation only to understand the report. For the bed is shorter than that a man can stretch himself on it; and the covering narrower than that he can wrap himself in it." (Isaiah 28:19, 20) The bed, which the Hierarchy has made for itself, and the covering of lies used to hide its nefarious work, are entirely inadequate for that purpose, says the Lord. The refuge of lies of that wicked organization shall be completely swept away. Heretofore no opposition to the Roman Catholic organization has been able to stand. Now it is God's due time to take action, and no part of the Roman Catholic organization, the modern Philistines, shall stand.

"RISE UP"

The work of Jehovah's witnesses is merely to declare the message of God. The real work must be and will be done by Jehovah in his own good way. No human institution could possibly wreck the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. God will completely wreck it; and concerning this he says: "For the Lord shall rise up as in mount Perazim, he shall be wroth as in the valley of Gibeon, that he may do his work, his strange work; and bring to pass his act, his strange act."—Isaiah 28:21.

How may we determine that this prophecy applies to the modern Philistines, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy? The evidence shows conclusively that the Philistines prophetically foreshadowed the Roman Catholic organization. What took place at Mount Perazim and at Gibeon, according to the prophecy itself, foretells exactly what is to come to pass, and this the Lord makes known to his people in advance that they might receive consolation and increase their hope. Bear in mind that it is the Lord's work and whatsoever he begins he accomplishes. The present-day persecution of Jehovah's witnesses by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy would, in time, necessarily result in the complete destruction of Jehovah's witnesses and their work unless God himself intervenes; and he gives his word that he will rise up and do that very thing. While the wicked persecution of Jehovah's witnesses continues throughout the earth, the faithful will take great courage in the understanding of this prophecy of Isaiah.

The prophecy of Isaiah 28:21 specifically refers to what is recorded by the Lord at 2 Samuel 5:17-25

and at 1 Chronicles 14: 8-17. A brief reference to that record is here appropriate.

Saul had been king of Israel for some time, but because of his unfaithfulness God removed the kingdom from him and caused David to be anointed king over Israel. 'The spirit of the Lord came upon David from that very day, but the spirit of the Lord departed from Saul.' (1 Samuel 16: 13, 14) David, with his headquarters at Hebron, ruled over the southern tribes of Judah and Benjamin, and for several years there was war between the southern and northern tribes. Abner, who was the chief man in the northern tribes, made overtures to bring about the union of all the tribes of Israel under David the king, and hence it is written: "And Abner had communication with the elders of Israel, saying, Ye sought for David in times past to be king over you. Now then do it; for the Lord hath spoken of David, saying, By the hand of my servant David I will save my people Israel out of the hand of the Philistines, and out of the hand of all their enemies."—2 Samuel 3: 17, 18.

David was thereafter installed as king over all Israel and proceeded to establish himself as king at Jerusalem. The division of the tribes and the war between the north and the south exactly suited the Philistines, and on the death of Saul the Philistines continued to exact tribute from the tribes in the northern portion.

They were afraid of David. The unity of all of the tribes of Israel under David, and his being made king over all of them, alarmed the Philistines, and they made ready to attack David: "But when the Philistines heard that they had anointed David king over

Israel, all the Philistines came up to seek David; and David heard of it, and went down to the hold." —2 Samuel 5:17.

The five kings that ruled the Philistines were in full harmony to destroy David because he was God's anointed one, under whom Israel was united. The Philistines knew of the song of the Israelites, which had been composed and sung by them to the effect, 'Saul has slain his thousands, but David his ten thousands.' (1 Samuel 18:7) They wanted David and would feel safe only when he was destroyed, and so they went after him. David is a type of Jehovah's beloved anointed One, Christ Jesus the King, and includes all the anointed of the temple or royal house of God, who are now Jehovah's witnesses.

When the Lord cleansed the temple he brought all his people into unity under Christ Jesus, the Head over the church and of the temple. (Ephesians 4:13) From and after that time the faithful anointed witnesses of Jehovah have declared his message against the wicked rulers of "Christendom", and particularly against the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. As the ancient Philistines wanted to get David, so now the effort of the modern Philistines, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy and their allies, is to bring about the destruction of God's "hidden ones", the anointed remnant on earth. —Psalm 83:3.

The Philistines assembled their entire army and went on the march toward Jerusalem, where they expected to find David and destroy him. "The Philistines also came and spread themselves in the valley of Rephaim." (2 Samuel 5:18) Rephaim appears to be the country lying south of Jerusalem and west of

Bethlehem. It means 'the place of the giants'. Doubtless David had his watchmen on the lookout, and when he was informed of the movement of the Philistines he began movement. He was too wise to be bottled up at Jerusalem; therefore he withdrew his little army and "went down to the hold", which was in a rough part of the country south and west of Bethlehem. David had taken refuge at the same place on two former occasions when Saul was attempting his destruction. (1 Samuel 22:4, 5; 24:22) David was not now fleeing from the Philistines, but he was putting his men in a position of strategy that he might make a surprise attack upon the enemy. The Philistines, of course, greatly outnumbered David's army, and the country that David had to traverse in order to make the attack was very difficult. The stage was set, and the prophetic picture now was made as to what shall befall the modern Philistines, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy.

"BAAL-PERAZIM"

The place where the battle took place was named by David "Baal-perazim". (The word *Perazim* means "a breach" or "breaking forth"; *Baal* having reference to Devil worship.) It means the place of the Lord's breaking forth against Devil worshipers, the soothsayers, the Philistines, ancient and modern. The breaking forth of the Lord there was like waters breaking their bounds and rushing like a torrent to destroy everything in their way. This same place is mentioned in Isaiah 28:21 and is there called "mount Perazim"; therefore the prophecy definitely fixes the battle illustrating the destruction of the Roman Cath-

olic Hierarchy. Before David began his attack, he inquired of Jehovah as to what he should do: "And David inquired of the Lord, saying, Shall I go up to the Philistines? wilt thou deliver them into mine hand? And the Lord said unto David, Go up; for I will doubtless deliver the Philistines into thine hand." (2 Samuel 5:19) David would not attempt to attack except on command of the Lord. The anointed of Jehovah trust in him with all their heart, and they have a full assurance that he will direct their paths. (Proverbs 3:5, 6) The Greater David is Christ Jesus, the chief officer of Jehovah God, and includes His anointed associates. The attack of David upon the Philistines, therefore, foretells the attack of Jehovah by the hand of Christ Jesus against the enemy, the modern Philistines.

David advanced on the rear of the enemy when the Lord had assured him that "doubtless" he would deliver the enemy into David's hands: "And David came to Baal-perazim, and David smote them there, and said, The Lord hath broken forth upon mine enemies before me, as the breach of waters. Therefore he called the name of that place Baal-perazim. And there they left their images, and David and his men burned them."—2 Samuel 5:20, 21.

The rout of the Philistines there was complete. The illustration of the attack as given by the words of the text is that of a mighty flood of waters breaking forth and sweeping everything before it. The Philistines were utterly helpless to withstand the onrush of the great flood of power that Jehovah turned loose on them. Their rout was so complete that they fled, leaving behind them their much cherished images repre-

senting the object of Devil worship, which images David destroyed. The Roman Hierarchy not only has images in all its ceremonies, but largely advertises its images to sell them to obtain revenue. (See advertisements in the *Catholic Directory,* 1935.) That battle, it is true, was fought by David, but only in the strength of the Lord, and it was typical, and foreshadowed something of far greater importance to come to pass under the Greater David, Christ Jesus. The description of the battle shows the hand of the Lord in it, and this is strongly supported by the words of the record, when Jehovah says: "For the Lord shall rise up as in mount Perazim."—Isaiah 28:21.

GIBEON

There was a second fight between David and the Philistines, as described in the second book of Samuel. Again the ancient Philistines assembled themselves in the same place: "And the Philistines came up yet again, and spread themselves in the valley of Rephaim." (2 Samuel 5:22) Doubtless the Philistines reasoned that David would again try to attack them in the same manner as on the previous occasion, and that this time they would be ready for David. While the Scriptures do not say that David at this time had taken his position at the hold, the presumption may be indulged that he was there and proceeded from that point to the attack: "And when David inquired of the Lord, he said, Thou shalt not go up; but fetch a compass behind them, and come upon them over against the mulberry trees."—2 Samuel 5:23.

The words "fetch a compass behind" would indicate that David was commanded to so employ his army

that they would be on the enemy's flank, as well as on the rear. This seems to be the first mention of flank movement in warfare. Here again the Philistines were outmaneuvered, which shows the hand of the Lord in the matter. He directed David to make the attack from a certain point indicated by the "mulberry trees". Just what is meant by "mulberry trees" is not clear. Biblical lexicographers define the word in this manner: "Weeping; the weeping tree." It might well picture the point at which comes a calamity upon the enemy that causes them to weep. With his army in position David must wait to receive the signal from the Lord. This proves that David was there solely at the command of Jehovah and what he did prophetically foreshadowed greater things to come to pass under Christ Jesus. This is the only place in the Scriptures where "mulberry trees" are mentioned, and therefore they have a specific application to the Philistines, ancient and modern.

David waited for orders from Jehovah, and Jehovah told him how he might know it was time for him to 'bestir himself', that is, to be on the alert and then move forward to the attack: "And let it be, when thou hearest the sound of a going in the tops of the mulberry trees, that then thou shalt bestir thyself: for then shall the Lord go out before thee, to smite the host of the Philistines."—2 Samuel 5:24.

'The sound of going' (according to *Rotherham:* "The sound of marching") in the mulberry trees not only seems to have furnished a signal for David to act, but clearly indicates that Jehovah's unseen host of holy angels there participated and led the assault against the enemy. This would clearly foreshadow that

when Christ Jesus, the Greater David, engages in the fight against the enemy, pictured by the Philistines, his armies in heaven will take part in the fight. (Revelation 19:14) The fight took place, with a disastrous result upon the Philistines. "And David did so, as the Lord had commanded him; and smote the Philistines from Geba until thou come to Gazer."—2 Samuel 5:25.

There is no reason to doubt that these two battles between David and the Philistines are the same as those referred to in Isaiah 28:21. It is true that in the account given at 2 Samuel 5:25 the word "Geba" is used to denote the place. In the margin the word "Gibeon" is used to denote the same place. Also in the record of the same fight set forth at 1 Chronicles 14:16 the place is named Gibeon. "David therefore did as God commanded him: and they smote the host of the Philistines from Gibeon even to Gazer." (1 Chronicles 14:16) Thus is shown that the prophecy of Isaiah 28:21 refers to the destruction of the Philistines, who were the chief enemies of God's chosen people Israel. The fact that the Scriptural account is of two fights, to wit, Perazim and Gibeon, does not necessarily mean that the Lord will make two separate and distinct fights against modern Philistines. The point of paramount importance here is that 'the Lord shall rise up AS at Mount Perazim and shall be wroth AS at Gibeon'. In other words, what took place at Mount Perazim and Gibeon foreshadows what the Lord will do against the antitypical Philistines.

Concerning Mount Perazim the record is: "David smote them there, and [David] said, The Lord hath broken forth upon mine enemies before me, as the

breach of waters." This is proof conclusive that whatever David accomplished in that fight he did it not in his own strength but in the strength and at the command of Jehovah God; and this foretells that the fight against the antitypical enemy, the modern Philistines, will be by the Greater David at the command of Jehovah. It was Jehovah who brought the victory to David, and this foreshadows that the antitypical battle is not the battle of creatures against modern Philistines, but is the battle of Jehovah. The words "breach of waters" mean the breaking forth or bursting out of waters, such as the onrush of a mighty flood which scatters and disperses and destroys everything in its path. Compare this with the language of Isaiah's prophecy in the preceding verses: "Hail shall sweep away the refuge of lies, and the waters shall overflow the hiding place." This seems to indicate that God would cause his message of hard and smiting truths to rush down upon the enemy, and this accompanied by the exercise of his great power, in which he will destroy the refuge of lies behind which modern Philistines have hidden and carried on their work and will completely wipe out that organization. In his judgment against the modern Philistines, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, not only shall the lying schemes and wickedness of that organization be exposed to view to honest people, but the organization will be brought into disgrace and completely destroyed.

But note that at Gibeon the violent indignation of God is plainly mentioned: "He shall be wroth [that is, express violently his indignation] as in the valley of Gibeon." It was immediately following the sign which Jehovah gave to David that David bestirred

himself; and then the record follows: "Then shall the Lord go out before thee, to smite the host of the Philistines." The Lord did there smite them, and this prophecy foreshadows that when God rises up in his anger, as described by the prophet Isaiah, he will put an end to the modern Philistines by completely putting them out of business, and all their activity shall end.

"STRANGE WORK"

That which came to pass at Mount Perazim and at Gibeon was not the work of man, but was the work of Jehovah God, and therefore clearly foreshadows or prophetically foretells some greater work to be done by Jehovah thereafter. That future work is described by Isaiah's prophecy as 'God's work', "his strange work," "his act," "his strange act." The importance of that work is emphasized by the fact that the words are repeated in the Scriptures: "his work, his strange work"; "his act, his strange act." The word "strange" here used means "foreign; extraordinary; wonderful; marvelous; unusual; that which is not expected". In this connection note what God through his prophet says concerning the hypocritical crowd that draw near to him with their mouths, which without a doubt refers to the modern Philistines, the Roman Catholic organization: "Wherefore the Lord said, Forasmuch as this people draw near me with their mouth, and with their lips do honour me, but have removed their heart far from me, and their fear toward me is taught by the precept of men: therefore, behold, I will proceed to do a marvellous work among this people, even a marvellous work, and a wonder: for the wisdom of

their wise men shall perish, and the understanding of their prudent men shall be hid. Woe unto them that seek deep to hide their counsel from the Lord, and their works are in the dark, and they say, Who seeth us? and who knoweth us?"—Isaiah 29: 13-15.

It is the Catholic Hierarchy that has induced the people to fear and to give up their hard-earned money, and it is their "wise" men who hypocritically pose before the people as representatives of God, and who say: "Who seeth us? and who knoweth us?" Jehovah had left the Philistines in the land of Judah to prove the Israelites, to know whether they would hearken to his commandments. (Judges 3: 1-4) The Philistines had used the Israelites to suit their own convenience and pleasure. The prophetic drama of Samson shows how God's people must be faithful even unto death. The prophetic picture of David's conflict with the Philistines shows a different thing. Jehovah had installed David as king over all Israel, and now the Philistines attempted to thwart God's purpose. The Philistines had for many years been the oppressors of the Israelites, and now God's time had come to deliver his people from the hand of their oppressors. Therefore what took place at Mount Perazim and Gibeon was Jehovah's first demonstration of his power in behalf of his kingdom. It was the first kingdom conflict, and gives the absolute assurance that Jehovah will fight for his kingdom. As soon as David was at Jerusalem as king the five Philistine lords entered into a conspiracy to crush David and to thus prevent God from accomplishing his purpose. God took a hand and prevented the accomplishment of that wicked purpose.

The record is: "All the Philistines came up to seek David." That must have been a tremendous horde of people, all marching out to make away with one man in particular, and his little army. It seems quite probable that this movement of the Philistines against David induced the prophet to write the second Psalm, wherein the enemy is represented as saying: "Let us break their bands asunder [that is, the bands binding together the Israelites in unity under King David and hindering the operations of the Philistines], and cast away their cords from us." Their conclusion would be amusing to the Lord, and therefore the psalmist continues: "He that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh; the Lord shall have them in derision. Then shall he speak unto them in his wrath, and vex them in his sore displeasure."—Psalm 2: 3-5.

The prophecy is now having a fulfillment on a far greater scale. We know that all true followers of Christ Jesus are now united under the King, the Greater David, and that these are loudly proclaiming Jehovah, his King, and his kingdom. Heretofore the Roman Catholic Hierarchy has had its own way. It has been a great test to the true followers of Christ Jesus. That wicked organization, acting under the pretext of being God's representatives on earth, has crushed every organization that has ever risen against it. Now Christ is on his throne and God's time has come to put his kingdom completely in control of the world. During the past few years, and since the union of the church under Christ, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy has begun and carries on its assaults against God's true people. In every country of earth the Hierarchy carries forward this wicked persecution of Jehovah's witness-

es and, as stated by Jehovah's prophet, the Hierarchy now says: "Let us break their bands [their unity under Christ which operates as a restraint to us] asunder." In this the Hierarchy induces the political and financial elements of Satan's organization, together with the Judas class, to join with it. Furthermore the prophet of God describes the Hierarchy: "For, lo, thine enemies make a tumult: and they that hate thee have lifted up the head. They have taken crafty counsel against thy people, and consulted against thy hidden ones. They have said, Come, and let us cut them off from being a nation; that the name of Israel may be no more in remembrance. For they have consulted together with one consent: they are confederate against thee."—Psalm 83:2-5.

Will not the Lord Jehovah now laugh and hold these presumptuous ones in derision? Is it not about Jehovah's due time to "speak unto them in his wrath, and vex them in his sore displeasure"? And why? Because, says the Lord, 'I have set my king upon my holy hill of Zion' to rule the world, and God will permit nothing to interfere with the accomplishment of his purposes. To his King, the Greater David, he now says: "Thou shalt break them with a rod of iron; thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel." —Psalm 2:9.

Clearly this seems to be the due time when Jehovah will "rise up" and assert himself, as he did in behalf of his people at Mount Perazim and Gibeon. Surely the prophecy shows that we are at the time when Jehovah will cause his hail to sweep away the refuge of lies, and his waters to overflow the enemy, disclos-

ing their wickedness, and this to be followed by his work of destruction.

But how can it be said that such would be Jehovah's "strange work" or "strange act"? The fact that Jehovah fought the battle in behalf of his king David would not be at all strange to David, because David knew that he was an instrument in the hands of Jehovah to deliver the Israelites out of the enemy's hands. Certainly David knew what is recorded in 2 Samuel 3:18, to wit: "For the Lord hath spoken of David, saying, By the hand of my servant David I will save my people Israel out of the hand of the Philistines." David's inquiring of the Lord what he should do is further proof that what took place was no surprise to David, but does show his complete confidence in Jehovah. For these reasons the work of Jehovah upon the Philistines was not at all strange to those who were devoted to God. To the Philistines, however, it must have seemed very strange, for the reason that they had carried on against the Israelites for years to suit their own pleasure and they had done so by permission of Jehovah, and now to have Jehovah cause them to be stricken by the Israelites, and completely routed, would seem passing strange to them.

Mark how well the prophetic picture fits the reality of the present time. For a long while the Roman Catholic Hierarchy has had its own way. It is the most powerful organization under the sun, and its power and influence are exercised in every land on earth. The members of the Hierarchy are heady, high-minded, austere, and scornful men. The Catholic Hierarchy is comparatively a small body of men, and the great multitude of Catholic people that support the organiza-

tion are not members of the Catholic church, but are called "children of the church" or "Catholic population". The Hierarchy numbers its "population" or adherents by the millions. The Hierarchy now is desperately attempting to destroy Jehovah's witnesses, that there may be no hindrance whatsoever to continuing its work to control the affairs of the nations of the earth. The Hierarchy confidently expects to shortly rid the earth of these "pestiferous witnesses", and on every hand they are heard to say, in effect, that "this crowd of Jehovah's witnesses will not last long".

When the time comes, however, for Jehovah to rise up as he did at Mount Perazim and Gibeon, and to express his righteous indignation against his enemies that have persecuted his chosen people, and when he brings about the downfall of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, that will be so wonderful, so unusual, so tremendous and so completely foreign to what has ever before come to pass, that millions of people who have been supporters of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy will exclaim: "How strange that God should destroy that organization!" They will see that the work is not the work of man, but must be the work of the Almighty, and it is to such that this work will seem "strange". It may be confidently expected, therefore, that the survivors will say, in substance: "How strange that this mighty organization, which for centuries has acted as if the representative of God and Christ on earth, should now be destroyed by the Lord! It is foreign to anything that has ever come to pass, and we cannot understand it." The work of Jehovah here mentioned will appear strange to every one who

does not understand it, and only those will understand it who are wholly devoted to Jehovah and his kingdom. To the anointed Jehovah's work will not appear at all strange, for the reason that they have been instructed of the Lord by his Word as to what shall come to pass, and having been instructed they follow his Word and obey his commandments. They now have the information that Jehovah is going to destroy the wicked Roman Catholic Hierarchy, and they know that Jehovah's purpose will be accomplished.—Isaiah 46:11.

All over the earth now the faithful are being persecuted by the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. This persecution is so terrible and powerful that the faithful know that no human power could successfully resist the wicked organization. Anyone not having full confidence and faith in God and his promises would not dare tell the truth about the wicked organization of the Hierarchy, but the faithful have taken their stand wholly on the side of the Lord and him they will serve, and not man. They know that their God will intervene in their behalf. They know that the Roman Catholic Hierarchy is the Devil's chief visible agent on earth and that God will search out and destroy all his enemies, including the Hierarchy. Having this knowledge and assurance from the Word of God, the faithful with confidence pray God to hasten the day when the enemy shall perish from the earth, and they continue with joyful words to sing Jehovah's praises, knowing that the enemy can do nothing worse than to kill them. The salvation of God's people he will accomplish by the hand of the antitypical David, Christ Jesus, the Beloved One of Jehovah, and the

great King says to these faithful anointed ones: "Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee the crown of life." (Revelation 2:10, *A.R.V.*) The anointed, therefore, confidently rest in the promises of Jehovah, and for that reason they rejoice in the tribulation that comes upon them because of their faithfulness. Seeing the fulfillment of Jehovah's prophecies, and knowing that his King is on the throne and at the temple for judgment, they look up and lift up their heads, because they know that the day of deliverance is at hand.

WHY?

Why would Jehovah "rise up" and smite the Philistines, seeing that they had by him been permitted to have dominion over the Israelites for years? The same question may be asked, and the same answer given, relative to the modern Philistines, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. The Philistines were privileged to be in the land that God had assigned to his chosen people, and they tried to thwart God's purpose to set up his typical kingdom there. Likewise for centuries the Roman Catholic Hierarchy has been suffered by Jehovah to occupy the place of his people on earth and has assumed to occupy the favored place of Jehovah; at the same time it vigorously attempts to prevent Jehovah's carrying out his purpose concerning his faithful and anointed ones and concerning the setting up of his kingdom. It acts with revenge and cruel hatred against all who are devoted to Jehovah. No one can be fully and intelligently serving Jehovah without opposing the wickedness of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, and hence they are hated by the Hier-

archy. Long after the ancient Philistines were destroyed as a nation God caused his prophet to write the prophecy in answer to the foregoing question as to why he will rise up, and that answer is recorded in these words, to wit: "Thus saith the Lord God: Because the Philistines have dealt by revenge, and have taken vengeance with a despiteful heart, to destroy it for the old hatred: therefore thus saith the Lord God: Behold, I will stretch out mine hand upon the Philistines, and I will cut off the Cherethims, and destroy the remnant of the sea coast. And I will execute great vengeance upon them with furious rebukes; and they shall know that I am the Lord, when I shall lay my vengeance upon them."—Ezekiel 25:15-17.

From the time of Isaac the ancient Philistines opposed God's people and ill-treated them. From the time of the antitypical Isaac Satan's agents persecuted Jesus and his true followers. Particularly the Roman Catholic Hierarchy have opposed and ill-treated God's chosen people. (Genesis 26:15-22) It is the decree of Jehovah, written long after the ancient Philistines as a nation had ceased to exist, that he would destroy the Philistines, and therefore without a question of doubt the prophecy refers to the modern Philistines, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy and all its conspiring lords. The day of the destruction of that wicked institution, the Roman Catholic Hierarchy, is at hand. "And I will cut off the inhabitant from Ashdod, and him that holdeth the sceptre from Ashkelon, and I will turn mine hand against Ekron; and the remnant of the Philistines shall perish, saith the Lord God." (Amos 1:8) "For Gaza shall be forsaken, and Ashkelon a desolation: they shall drive out

Ashdod at the noon day, and Ekron shall be rooted up. Woe unto the inhabitants of the sea coast, the nation of the Cherethites! the word of the Lord is against you; O Canaan, the land of the Philistines, I will even destroy thee, that there shall be no inhabitant." (Zephaniah 2:4, 5) The pride of the modern Philistines shall cease. (Zechariah 9:6) The combined hypocritical and wicked religionists shall be destroyed; and this information is now given for the benefit of the remnant and for the benefit of the Jonadabs or "great multitude". (See *Preparation,* page 150.)

The Scriptures seem fully to support the conclusion that the destruction of the religionists under the lead of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy will be the first part, or the beginning, of Armageddon. The Devil religion, mislabeled "Christianity", was first put forward under the name of the Church of Rome, out of which grew the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. That organization is mentioned prophetically in the Scriptures under the unpleasant title of 'the old whore'. There was a period of time when in the world there was an organization known as "Protestantism", and which opposed the Roman Catholic organization; but about the time of the World War the "Protestant" (so called) organization ceased and went over, bag and baggage, to the Hierarchy, and now the entire lot constitutes "the great whore". This crowd of public gangsters and enemies of God set up the League of Nations as a substitute for God's kingdom. Anything with them to turn the people away from Jehovah and his King. These, pretending to stand for God, in fact stand for and represent the Devil, and this whole bunch composes an integral part of the beastly rule of the earth.

'And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire. For God hath inclined their hearts to do his purpose, even to execute one purpose.' (Revelation 17:16, 17) (See *Light,* Book Two, pages 80-114.) This is exactly in harmony with Isaiah's prophecy. Jehovah's storm of hail shall sweep away the refuge of lies and fully expose to all mankind the duplicity of "the old whore", and her destruction shall precede the destruction of "the beast" and of "the false prophet". (Revelation 19:19-21) The wicked modern Philistines shall be ensnared in their own work of their own hands.—Psalm 9:15, 16; see also *Preservation,* pages 139-143.

Aside from what the Scriptures state, it would be presumptuous for any man to say how God will accomplish "his work, his strange work", "his act, his strange act." Whatsoever the means used by the Lord to accomplish this purpose, it will be the work and act of God just the same, even though he uses some human agencies to accomplish his purpose, as he used David at Mount Perazim. Let the faithful now rest in the fact that just as certainly as the Roman Catholic Hierarchy is at the present time engaged in the persecution of those who serve Jehovah, just so certainly will Jehovah rise up and smite the Roman Catholic Hierarchy to the dust. Therefore let the faithful proceed with their work without fear and regardless of the acts of the wicked. God has shown that the Hierarchy is the Devil's chief wicked, visible organization, and He has declared in no uncertain terms that all the wicked shall perish.

Armageddon is the work of Jehovah, because the Scriptures emphatically declare so, that God will do his work at Armageddon by the hand of Christ Jesus. The fact, however, that Jehovah by his prophet speaks of "his work, his strange work", "his act, his strange act," repeating the words, seems clearly to indicate two distinctive parts of Armageddon: (1) That which accomplishes the destruction of hypocritical religionists; and (2) that which accomplishes the complete destruction of all of Satan's organization. Armageddon, therefore, as a whole is the work and act of Jehovah, but that part of Armageddon which he says is "his strange work", "his strange act," would seem clearly to refer to something that would appear to many creatures as very strange. The final conflict would not appear to be strange, for the reason that all professed Christians have been informed by the Scriptures and otherwise of Armageddon as one great time of trouble.

But now consider the fact that there is one great religious organization that has been kept prominently before the people for many centuries, and which organization has repeatedly declared itself to be the special representative of God on earth and which millions of people have been induced to believe is a divine organization. Such people are not expecting the destruction of that organization. That great religious organization is the Roman Catholic system, ruled by its Hierarchy, and to which there is attached a "Catholic population" of millions of persons. All the nations of "Christendom" tacitly admit that the Catholic Church system is the representative of "god", but, of course, they do not understand which god.

Now when Jehovah singles out this particular Roman Catholic organization and brings it into disgrace and humiliation, as illustrated by uncircumcision and by 'emerods in the secret parts' of the Philistines, and then sweeps away the refuge of lies under which the Roman Catholic Hierarchy has long hid its nefarious work, and exposes the hypocrisy of that organization and then completely destroys the Roman Catholic organization, such will clearly appear to be a "strange work" and "strange act" of the Almighty God; and the millions of people left on earth, and who will see that marvelous work and act, will no doubt in great astonishment cry out: "How strange that the Almighty God would destroy that organization against which we have been taught that nothing, not even hell, can prevail!"

Hypocrisy is despicable in the sight of Jehovah. He says: "The vile person will speak villany, and his heart will work iniquity, to practice hypocrisy, and to utter error against the Lord, to make empty the soul of the hungry." (Isaiah 32:6) There the Lord clearly describes the Roman Catholic Hierarchy. The greatest hypocrisy ever practiced amongst men is that practiced by the Hierarchy, and the end of such is annihilation. Saul became a hypocrite. (1 Samuel 15:1-23) He was made king at the instance of the people, and he illustrates those who were once in line for the kingdom but were moved by selfishness that they might have personal gain, and receive life and power and honor. (1 Samuel 8:4-22; 10:17-25) When the spirit of the Lord departed from Saul, he acted with the Philistines in the continuous effort to destroy David, God's anointed. Saul seems clearly to

picture the "evil servant" class, whom the Lord Jesus described. These were once in line for the kingdom. Moved by selfishness, being rejected by the Lord at his temple judgment, these 'began to smite their fellow servants', and concerning such Jesus said: "The lord . . . shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites." (Matthew 24:48-51) God will permit no one to successfully interfere with the establishment of his kingdom under Christ.

HONEST CATHOLICS

Honest persons have often been deceived and led into a trap. The Catholic organization boasts to this effect: "Give us a child until it is seven years old and it will not depart from the Catholic faith." A child brought up in ignorance of God and of his Word, and into the mind of which child there is instilled the teaching of men, the Catholic doctrine, which is contrary to the Word of God, and which child is constantly warned under the penalty of purgatory and hell to avoid reading anything that is not first approved by the Catholic priest, is almost certain to continue in ignorance concerning Jehovah God. For this reason, by means of fear and the precepts of men, millions have been held in bondage and in ignorance. The great mass of people that support the Catholic church organization are in no wise members of the church and have nothing whatsoever to do with the government thereof, and are designated by the Hierarchy, and as set forth in the publications of that organization, as "Catholic population". (See *Official Catholic Directory*, 1935.) There are millions of such who are conscientiously obeying the commands of the Roman Cath-

olic Hierarchy, and who are totally ignorant of the fact that they are going contrary to the Word of God.

The members of the Hierarchy chuckle in their glee and say: "We have made lies our refuge, and under falsehoods we have hid ourselves. Who knoweth us? and who can see us? We pretend to pray and the dupes will pay." By reason thereof they have been enabled to keep the mass of the Catholic population in ignorance of God and his kingdom, and to continue them in their ignorance is the reason why they warn Catholics to read none of the publications of the WATCH TOWER. Let those who desire righteousness be assured that God will, according to his promise, sweep away the refuge of lies behind which the Hierarchy hides, and will thus open the eyes of all honest people to the truth. Honest Catholics will then enjoy the opportunity of understanding the truth and will come to know that God and his kingdom under Christ are the only hope of the human race. With the Hierarchy disgraced and destroyed, the honest people, including the "Catholic population", will seek Zion, which is God's organization. Concerning what took place at Mount Perazim and at Gibeon, which marked the victory under David, the record reads (1 Chronicles 14:17): "And the fame of David went out into all lands; and the Lord brought the fear of him upon all nations." Here again David represents Christ Jesus, the beloved of Jehovah, and the fear of Christ Jesus, the Greater David, clearly means the release of millions of "Catholic population" from the bondage of the wicked Hierarchy.

When the Jonadabs take a firm stand on the side of Jehovah God and his kingdom, and in obedience

to God's commandments continue to seek meekness and righteousness, they will suffer reproach at the hands of any and all of Satan's agents remaining on earth, particularly those pictured by "the beast" and "the false prophet". They will suffer because they are companions of those who have been and are persistently announcing the kingdom of God under Christ. (Hebrews 10:32-35) Let all those who love God and his King now have full assurance of faith that Jehovah's time to establish his kingdom is here and has begun and all opponents that the Devil can muster cannot possibly prevent its complete establishment. Jehovah has demonstrated and plainly shown his people that soon he will rise up and fight the battles of his people who are for his kingdom, and he is certain to rid the earth of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy and all the representatives of the Devil. The purpose of this is the vindication of Jehovah's name; and by his prophet he says concerning the infliction of this drastic punishment upon the modern Philistines: "And they shall know that I am Jehovah, when I shall lay my vengeance upon them."—Ezekiel 25:17, *A.R.V.*

The Roman Catholic Hierarchy is now conducting a vigorous campaign in all parts of the earth in its attempt to force the people into the Catholic organization. The Hierarchy is proceeding upon the theory that there are just two general classes of people, to wit, Communists and Roman Catholic, and that all who do not line up with the Roman Catholic side are therefore necessarily to be classed as Communists. Clearly this is the Devil's effort to separate the people and checkmate the work that the Lord Jesus is doing. Christ Jesus is now separating the persons of good

will, who are called the "sheep" class, from those that are wicked, whom he designates as the "goat" class. (Matthew 25:32-46) The Devil, operating through the Hierarchy, is trying to offset the Lord's work by separating the people into the classes of Communists and Roman Catholic.

The Roman Catholic Hierarchy and its political and financial dupes and allies have suppressed the WATCH TOWER SOCIETY and confiscated its property in the countries of Austria and Germany and other parts of "Christendom". It has recently caused many countries and states to enact laws for the purpose of suppressing speech and publication of the truth. It has caused many of the faithful to be persecuted unmercifully, ill-treated, and thrown into prison, and continues its wicked work. These modern Philistines deal by revenge and with a despiteful heart, and the Lord's faithful people continue to suffer. Many have wondered why God permits this. Let none of the faithful be disturbed. Let all who love God and Christ Jesus now fully rest in faith and with greater determination than ever go on with the service of the Lord, knowing this, that God's announced purpose to rise up and smash the enemy will soon take place and every one who continues faithful to the Lord amidst all these trials shall receive the everlasting blessing of Jehovah, which makes such exceeding rich. Surely Jesus had in mind just such times when he said: "He that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved." (Matthew 24:13) Our God, whom we serve, will save and deliver his people to the honor and glory of his name. The time is at hand and, behold, the "great multitude" appears.

CHAPTER VIII

GREAT MULTITUDE

JEHOVAH gave to Jesus Christ a revelation of things that must come to pass, and Jesus sent an angel and caused John to write about those things in symbolic language. (Revelation 1: 1, 2) That revelation discloses that the church of God, which is built upon Christ Jesus, the precious Foundation Stone or Rock, is composed of 144,000, who are also pictured as living stones. (Revelation 7: 4; 1 Peter 2: 1-10) John in this great revelation stands for or represents those persons on the earth at the time of the appearing of Christ Jesus at the temple, and such persons are anointed and are permitted to have an understanding of The Revelation.

John was on the isle of Patmos when the Lord gave him that vision. He was first told of the sealing of the 144,000 who are to be associates of Christ Jesus in the royal house of Jehovah God. Then John says: "After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands." (Revelation 7: 9) The words "After this" apply to the time of John's seeing these things. This also shows that the remnant, whom John pictured, would see or discern the 144,000 and that thereafter the remnant would discern the true meaning of the "great multitude" and pass this information on

to others. The 144,000 are spirit members of God's organization and shall be for ever in heaven, whereas the "great multitude" is made up of "other sheep", or Jonadabs, or people of good will, who obtain the riches of earth and dwell for ever upon the earth in peace and endless joy. The Scriptures clearly show that it is after God has taken out or selected those who shall be of the heavenly class that he brings forth the "great multitude", and this he does shortly before the battle of the great day of God Almighty.—Revelation 16:14.

POSITION

Concerning the "great multitude" the scripture reads that they "stood before the throne". The fact that they "stood" shows that they are approved by the Most High, because "the ungodly shall not stand in the judgment, nor sinners in the congregation of the righteous". (Psalm 1:5) Stand where? Would they have to go to heaven in order to stand approved before the Lord? Certainly not; nor would they have to be in heaven in order to stand before the throne, even in reference to position or with reference to approval. While standing before the throne those of the great multitude are shown to be hungry and thirsty, whereas if they were in heaven there would be no occasion for them to hunger and thirst. Those who are hungry and thirsty for spiritual provender are the ones on earth who are seeking to be fed on that which will satisfy their heart's desire. Manifestly the great multitude are here shown as standing before the judgment throne of Christ Jesus, that is, the throne of God and where God, by proxy, judges, that is to

say, Jehovah judges by his beloved Son, to whom he has committed all judgment. It is written that those who stand before the throne are crying out: "Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb."—Revelation 7:10.

It was in 1914 that Jehovah put his beloved Son on the throne of authority. (Psalm 2:6) In the year 1918, or three and one-half years after enthroned, Christ Jesus began judgment at the temple. In standing before the Lord for judgment these need not be in heaven, for the reason, it is stated by Jesus, that when he assumes his throne for the judgment of the nations all nations shall be gathered before him, and surely these nations are not in heaven. "When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: and before him shall be gathered all nations; and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats." —Matthew 25:31, 32.

With whom does Christ Jesus begin judgment upon assuming his high office as Judge upon the throne? Not with the dead, but with the living. "The Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the [living] . . . at his appearing and his kingdom." (2 Timothy 4:1) Christ Jesus is at the temple upon his throne of judgment and glory, and before him are gathered all the nations for the purpose of separating and judging. Even so the great multitude are "of all nations" on the earth, and are before Christ Jesus for judgment, which judgment shows that it is those of good will who take the side of the Lord and who become the "other sheep" of the Lord. To the "sheep" Christ Jesus says: "Come,

ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world." These are the ones that get life eternal, on the earth.—Matthew 25:32-46.

Further describing the great multitude these words are used: "clothed with white robes." In verse fourteen of this picture is stated the means by which their robes are made white. The words "white robes" used in verse nine symbolically declare that members of the great multitude stand before the throne as approved ones.

At Revelation 6:9-11 a class of faithful men is described who suffered martyrdom because of their complete devotion to Jehovah, and to them "white robes were given". But it is not stated that they first "washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb". The white robes given to those faithful men symbolically testify to their approval, without stating how they were made white.

They were faithful unto Jehovah even unto death, proving their integrity; and while the scripture does not state that they washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb, other scriptures plainly teach that they had and exercised faith in the shed blood of Christ Jesus.

Revelation 19:8 describes the Lamb's wife to whom is granted that she be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white. But that text has no reference to the great multitude. What, then, is pictured by the robes given the individual members of the great multitude with which they are clothed? These white robes picture that they are clean and approved. Cleanliness results by reason of faith in the shed blood of Christ Jesus,

who loved us and washed us from our sins in his own blood. (Revelation 1:5) The great multitude by reason of their faith in the shed blood of Christ Jesus, and devoting themselves to God, thereby wash their robes in the blood of the Lamb and make themselves clean.

Every human creature that obtains life must obtain it as a gift of God through Christ Jesus, and this is the only way; and all such must have their sins washed away by exercising faith in the shed blood of Christ Jesus. The people of good will, that is to say, the Jonadab class, are those who have faith in the shed blood of Christ Jesus as the only means of redemption and salvation for the human race, and these voluntarily agree to do the will of God; and in taking this step of consecrating themselves to God by faith in the blood of Christ Jesus they stand approved before the judgment seat of Christ, and this approval is symbolized by the white robes which John observed that they wore. These keep their robes clean by continuing in faith and devotion to God and Christ Jesus, his anointed King. The great multitude, therefore, could not come into existence until the Lord Jesus Christ appeared at the temple and began his judgment, and therefore the great multitude could not appear prior to 1918.

PALMS

What is the meaning of "palms in their hands"? It was in 1918 that the "precious corner stone" was laid in Zion in its completeness, when Christ Jesus was presented to Zion as Jehovah's King. In due time the remnant saw that this Chief Corner Stone had

been laid in completeness, and they rejoiced. Thereafter others learned this great truth and believed it and hailed Jehovah's anointed Ruler, Christ Jesus, as the world's rightful King. This great multitude hails Christ Jesus as the King and rightful Ruler of the world and the Savior of mankind. When Christ Jesus rode into Jerusalem upon the ass and presented himself as King this was the laying of the Corner Stone in miniature, and foreshadowed the laying of the Corner Stone in completeness when Christ appears at the temple as King. When the Lord Jesus rode into Jerusalem he was there hailed by the multitude as King, as it is written: "And a very great multitude [And the most part of the multitude (*R.V.*)] spread their garments in the way; others cut down branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way. And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the son of David! Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord: Hosanna in the highest!"—Matthew 21:8, 9.

In recording the account of the miniature laying of the Corner Stone John wrote: "On the morrow a great multitude that had come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem, took the branches of the palm trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried out, Hosanna: Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord, even the King of Israel." (John 12:12, 13, *A.R.V.*) In the gospel by John and in The Revelation John makes mention of the palm branches, and that in connection with the great multitude. Thus at the miniature laying of the Corner Stone what took place foreshadowed that which John saw in vision of the laying of the Corner Stone in completeness.

Let this be carefully noted, that when Jesus entered Jerusalem the great multitude that spread down their garments and waved their palm branches were not then the disciples of Jesus Christ, as the facts subsequently showed. Only a short time before that triumphant entry of Jesus into Jerusalem he had addressed his disciples, speaking to them as a "little flock". (Luke 12:32) It was afterwards and when Jesus was riding upon an ass as King that the great multitude appeared and shouted: 'Hosanna to the son of David; blessed is he that cometh in the name of Jehovah.' Likewise when Jesus Christ is enthroned, the great multitude are not recognized, discerned and understood and are not the disciples of Christ Jesus. It is after he is presented as King and seated upon his throne of judgment that the great multitude are discerned with palms in their hands. It seems, therefore, that the miniature laying of the Corner Stone in Zion and the incidents connected therewith picture the laying of the Corner Stone in completeness and the events that co-ordinated therewith. This would prove that the great multitude mentioned in Revelation 7:9 began to come into existence after the Lord appeared at the temple for judgment.

Manifestly those with "palms in their hands", as mentioned in The Revelation, are not the footstep followers of Christ Jesus, that is to say, the remnant on earth; but that great multitude is made up of others who hear about Jehovah and his kingdom under Christ and who desire that kingdom. It is seen that these are gathered out of the nations and tribes, kindreds, peoples and tongues; and when they learn that God's gracious kingdom has come, they take their stand on the

side of Jehovah and his King and they wave their palm branches as an evidence that they are heartily in accord with and support the King, about whom they have learned.

When human creatures learn of something that is to their great benefit it is difficult for them to refrain from giving expression to their joy. No good news could come to man that would make him so glad as the news that salvation is provided for him. This is shown to be the frame of mind of those who compose the great multitude standing before the throne with palms in their hands and with what they see as they there stand. Concerning this John writes: "And [they] cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb."—Revelation 7:10.

This great multitude cried out with gladness, even as the great multitude cried out with gladness at the miniature laying of God's Corner Stone, when Jesus rode into Jerusalem. When the people of earth of good will learn that the King of righteousness has come and that God has provided salvation by and through the blood of Christ Jesus and his kingdom, and that there is no other means of salvation, they shout the praises of Jehovah, who is the Author of salvation, and they devote themselves to his service. The people of good will on the earth today who hear the truth do not remain mum, but vigorously join Jehovah's witnesses, the remnant, in crying out the kingdom message. They have the good news which they have received at the mouth of Jehovah's witnesses, and which the witnesses at the command of the Lord their King have brought to the "sheep" class and have said to them: "Let him

that heareth say, Come." (Revelation 22:17) And being thus invited this sheep class, the Jonadabs, do say to others: 'Come and learn the only way of salvation.' This is shown by the words of Revelation 7:10, when those of the "great multitude" class are saying to others: "Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb."

When Jesus rode into Jerusalem, in A.D. 33, the great multitude then cried out in the words of the Psalm, or song, previously written: "Save now, I beseech thee, O Lord: O Lord, I beseech thee, send now prosperity." (Psalm 118:25) They shouted: "Hosanna to the son of David." The Hebrew word *Hosanna* means "Save now, we beseech thee"; which is the language of Psalm 118:25, *R.V.* Likewise when Christ Jesus the Chief Corner Stone of Jehovah's organization is laid in Zion in completeness, his faithful followers begin to cry out: "Open to me the gates of righteousness: I will go into them, and I will praise the Lord; this gate of the Lord, into which the righteous shall enter. I will praise thee; for thou hast heard me, and art become my salvation. The stone which the builders refused is become the head stone of the corner. This is the Lord's doing; it is marvellous in our eyes. This is the day which the Lord hath made; we will rejoice and be glad in it. Save now, I beseech thee, O Lord: O Lord, I beseech thee, send now prosperity. Blessed be he that cometh in the name of the Lord; we have blessed you out of the house of the Lord." (Psalm 118:19-26) Since then the people of good will now on earth, the sheep class, the Jonadabs, who have heard the glad cry of Jehovah's witnesses,

have also taken up that blessed message and continued to cry it out that others might hear.

"Salvation" consists in the vindication of Jehovah's name and his Word, and results to those who maintain their integrity toward him, and who praise his holy name. There is no other means of salvation, and that salvation comes to those who heartily avail themselves of Jehovah's means for their salvation. (Acts 4:11, 12) The Devil deceives the people and turns them away from God, and puts forth his agents who claim that the salvation of the people comes by reason of his agents. A striking example of this is the exaltation of one Hitler in Germany. He issues the command that all persons shall "Heil Hitler", which in the English language means "Salvation is by Hitler". But all people who have faith in God know that neither Hitler, Mussolini, the NRA scheme nor any other scheme nor any creature can bring salvation to the people.

Those who have faith in God and in Christ Jesus, and who take their stand on the side of God and his kingdom, by their course of action loudly acknowledge, confess and acclaim Jehovah as their Savior, which salvation is given to them through Christ Jesus, and these are represented in the Revelation account as saying: "Salvation to our God [Jehovah] which sitteth upon the throne and [salvation] unto the Lamb [Christ Jesus]." Thus all such "Heil Jehovah and Christ". They do not "Heil Hitler" nor any other creature, and they could not be faithful to Jehovah God by exclaiming to any creature "Heil", for the reason that no creature has any power of salvation. These persons of good will now discern and gladly confess Je-

hovah as King Eternal and the Supreme One, and that Jehovah, and Christ Jesus, his anointed King, together constitute "the Higher Powers", to which powers all persons that get life must be subject. Those people of good will hear and believe that the kingdom of God under Christ has come and that Jehovah reigns, and they cry out, as it is written in the Psalm: "The Lord reigneth, let the earth rejoice; let the multitude of isles be glad thereof."—Psalm 97:1.

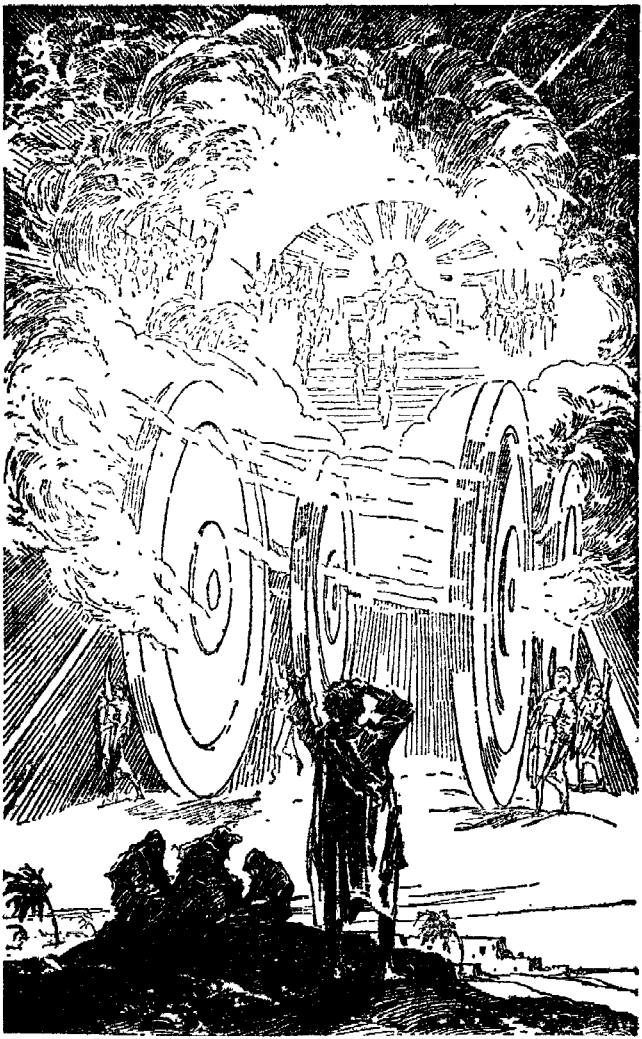
This corresponds with the cry of A.D. 33 by the great multitude of that time; and now the great multitude of the present day cry out: 'Salvation is come; save now, send us prosperity.' They attribute the work of God's salvation or vindication unto his great Vindicator, Christ Jesus, the Lamb of God, who sits upon the throne, which Jehovah God has provided for him, and that their own salvation is from Jehovah by and through Christ Jesus, and not from any other source. The facts and the evidence that have come to pass during the past five years conclusively prove that the great multitude is made up of human creatures who hear and accept and rejoice in the Kingdom of God under Christ. The palms in their hands in effect say: "We hail our King and Savior; our allegiance and our devotion are to him. Our salvation comes from Him, the King Eternal, who is Jehovah, and through Christ Jesus, his anointed Ruler of the world." They openly confess that they are on the Lord's side.

TEMPLE ASSEMBLY

At this point in the vision had by John, as recorded in Revelation seven, there appears an assembly of those who are wholly devoted to Jehovah. Mark now

who are shown to be present at that assembly: "And all the angels stood round about the throne, and about the elders and the four beasts, and fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God." (Revelation 7:11) Christ Jesus, the Lamb of God, is seated upon his throne of glory. By authority from Jehovah God he took that exalted place in 1914, but it was three and one-half years thereafter until the assembly at the temple took place, when he comes for judgment. Standing round about the throne, as shown in the Revelation picture, are all the holy angels. This must refer to the time described by Jude: "And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints [holy ones (*R.V.*)], to execute judgment upon all; and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him." (Jude 14, 15) That marks the time of the appearing of the Lord Jesus at the temple for judgment.

Moses had prophesied of the same thing, when he said: "The Lord . . . came with ten thousands of saints [holy ones (*R.V.*)]." (Deuteronomy 33:2) These holy angels are assembled for the service of Jehovah and Christ Jesus, and the Revelation picture shows that it was the time of the coming of the Lord Jesus to the temple; and this is further supported by the words of Jesus, to wit: "When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory." (Matthew 25:31) It is the judgment seat of Jehovah, and there



JEHOVAH'S ORGANIZATION SEEN IN SYMBOL
Pages 72 and 308

[B L A N K]

is seated Christ Jesus as the presiding Justice to render judgment.

The apostle Paul, describing this same thing, says: "Ye are come . . . to the general assembly . . . and to God the Judge of all, . . . and to Jesus." (Hebrews 12:22-24) The judgment at the temple begins with the house of God. (1 Peter 4:17; Malachi 3:3) By these scriptures the time is definitely fixed and proves beyond all doubt that the great multitude of Revelation 7:9 does not appear until after the coming of the Lord to the temple, and that could not have been possible prior to 1918, and was, in fact, later and after the pouring out of the holy spirit on all of God's servant class.—Acts 2:17, 18.

Note that Revelation 7:9 gives the description of the great multitude, that these "stood before the throne, and before the Lamb", whereas the description of the assembly of the temple company, as stated in Revelation 7:11, says: "The angels stood round about the throne." The temple assembly includes the holy angels, the elders and the four living creatures, as shown by Revelation 4:4, to wit: "And round about the throne were four and twenty seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold."

These "four and twenty elders" include all those who are able ministers of the new covenant (2 Corinthians 3:6), and which includes the remnant, that is, Jehovah's witnesses, because these have been brought to maturity in Christ and have become elders in fact. No one could be of this elder class until he is an elder

in fact by reason of being in Christ and brought to maturity.—Ephesians 4:11-13.

This time is fixed by the cleansing of the temple, which God's people discerned for the first time in 1932 (Daniel 8:14); and now Jehovah permits them to discern the true meaning of the "great multitude". These elders are shown as standing with Christ Jesus, because they are his brethren. (Hebrews 2:11) These elders are therefore "ambassadors for Christ". (2 Corinthians 5:20; Ephesians 6:20) This picture, therefore, shows the 144,000 present at the assembly, which assembly could not take place until the coming of the Lord to the temple; and therefore the great multitude could not be in existence until after that time.

The vision also discloses Jehovah's four-square universal organization composed of his living creatures, all supporting Jehovah and appearing in complete contrast with Satan's organization; and this is shown by the words (verse 11), "the four beasts [four living creatures (*R.V.*)]"; "full of eyes before and behind." (Revelation 4:6) Jehovah and Christ Jesus are in the throne, and the four living creatures, picturing Jehovah's universal organization, are round about the throne.—See *Light,* Book One, page 57.

Jehovah's organization, appearing to the remnant, is one of the 'two great signs in heaven' (Revelation 12:1, 3), and is in exact contrast with the other great sign appearing and which sign pictures the Devil's organization. These two great signs appear for the first time at the birth of the Kingdom, but they were discerned by Jehovah's faithful people on earth for the first time about 1924; and here we are more than ten years later discerning the Scriptural meaning of

the "great multitude". Those who compose the great multitude must first receive some information in order to know of the two great organizations, pictured by the signs, before they could choose; and therefore it is certain that the great multitude could not come into existence until after the appearing of the Lord Jesus at the temple, and after that the "other sheep" class receive the information at the mouth of Jehovah's witnesses. This sheep class, receiving the information, align themselves on the side of Jehovah and his King, and they get up into the "chariot", that is to say, the organization of Jehovah, at the invitation of the Greater Jehu, and thus they go along with Jehovah's witnesses.

The vision of the temple assembly shows all the angels and all the elders and all the living creatures, that is, all of Jehovah's organization, giving praise and worship to God. And they "fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God". This is in exact accord with the statement of Revelation four, to wit: That the four beasts, and the four and twenty elders "fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever". (Revelation 4:8-10) This they do regardless of all opposition, and they do not ask any creature or any part of Satan's organization as to how they shall worship God and when they shall worship him, but all these of Jehovah's organization do worship God according to his commandments. Thus it is seen again that it would be entirely contrary to God's will for Jehovah's witnesses to ask permission of any of the worldly organization or for a license to engage in preaching the gospel. All of these faithful ones of Jehovah have deci-

sively settled the matter as to whom they will worship, and therefore they worship Jehovah God in spirit and in truth. These witnesses of Jehovah now bear testimony, or 'the fruit of the kingdom', before the people of good will, and these latter ones do see their privilege of taking their stand on the side of Jehovah and of giving praise and service to him; and this they do.

To whom are those described in Revelation 7:11 saying "Amen"? They are saying "Amen" to what the great multitude has cried out, and are expressing themselves as in full accord therewith. Concerning this great heavenly assembly the record says: "Saying, Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might, be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen." (Revelation 7:12) The remnant and all, including the great multitude, are in full accord, and all giving praise to Jehovah God; and this shows that they love him and serve him in harmony with his commandment. That leaves nothing to the credit of creatures or persons, church organizations, or any other organization of men. These are not committing the "sin of Samaria". (Amos 8:14) They are not holding to some man's teaching and giving him the credit therefor. They recognize that all their blessings proceed from Jehovah God and that he is the one that is worthy of praise. These show full and complete devotion to God, and such is true worship in spirit of the Most High. The scriptures at Revelation 7:11, 12 do not apply specifically to the great multitude, but the words of verse twelve show that the great multitude is in full accord with and doing the same thing that all others are doing who are wholly devoted to Jehovah God.

Manifestly verses eleven and twelve appear in the record here to emphasize the absolute requirements of Jehovah, that there shall be undivided devotion to him, and show that all whom he approves are wholly devoted to him. All of these acknowledge that their devotion for ever is for Jehovah God, because they say: "Unto our God for ever and ever." They have not the slightest desire for one moment to compromise with the Devil and his crowd, and are not 'more or less contaminated with the ideas and ways' of the Devil's organization. The same attitude and devotion of God's approved ones is shown in the words of the record at Revelation 4:11, to wit: "Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power; for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created." Such must be the attitude of all creation that receives everlasting life, including, of course, those of the great multitude. The question that each creature must answer in due time is, "Am I on the side of the Devil or on Jehovah's side?" There is no halfway ground, and no one can be honest with God and at the same time try to please the Devil's crowd.

In God's organization creatures hold different positions, some higher than others in rank, but there is no reason to say that there is a difference in the degree of faithfulness required on the part of each and all. All must be completely devoted to Jehovah. Disloyalty is the identifying mark of Satan's organization and of all creatures therein. Loyalty to God marks every part of Jehovah's organization. The prophets maintained their integrity toward Jehovah and were subjected to the same kind of tests as have come

upon the royal house. The position of the faithful prophets of old will be less exalted than that of the royal house. The position of the great multitude is less exalted than that of the members of the royal house and the princes in the earth, but that makes absolutely no difference. Whatever is the position occupied by any creature in God's organization, that position is an honorable one. It is the most blessed favor to receive life from Jehovah God, and the condition precedent to receiving this blessing and occupying any position is to love Jehovah with all one's heart, mind and soul. The entire organization of Jehovah is honorable and blessed, and happy is the creature that has any place therein. Some have selfishly craved to be in heaven and help run the universe. Others have said: "Whatever my position given me by the Lord, I shall be glad." The latter is the proper attitude.

The picture here shows the host of angels and the saints all in full accord, and likewise the great multitude in full accord with them, and all together singing praises to the name of Jehovah.

FURTHER IDENTIFICATION

The identification of the great multitude has not heretofore been clear to those creatures on earth who serve God. Now, however, we see that the great multitude could not be identified by the followers of Christ Jesus until the coming of the Lord to the temple. Evidently John, being in doubt, propounded the question as to the identity of the great multitude. Had he known, he would not have asked the question; and

had the John class known, they would not have been inquiring in the years past.

"What are these which are arrayed in white robes? and whence came they?" (Revelation 7:13) The question here propounded is the very question that the remnant of Jehovah's witnesses have been asking for some time, and particularly since the coming of the Lord Jesus to the temple. When the remnant saw that each one must maintain his integrity toward Jehovah, and that the chief purpose of Jehovah is the vindication of his name, then they were not satisfied with the identification heretofore given concerning the great multitude. They began to ask questions concerning the great multitude, and they would not be asking such questions about a Bible picture of themselves. Evidently the question propounded in verse thirteen is propounded because the remnant cannot see that the picture of the great multitude applies to the 144,000 members of the body of Christ as a whole or to any part of it; and further, because it is inconsistent for any company to be halfway devoted to Jehovah. Had the remnant identified the great multitude as themselves, they would not have asked the question here propounded.

It seems quite evident that because John had propounded the question the "elder" repeated it to see whether or not John could give the answer. It was the elder who said: 'Who are these which are arrayed in white robes?' (*R.V.*) The fact that an elder propounds the question shows that the question was not settled prior to the bringing of the church to maturity in Christ, which time is marked by the cleansing of the temple or sanctuary, which did not take place

until 1932. (Daniel 8:14) It was then that the remnant understood the true meaning of an elder in fact, and how one becomes an elder; and it is after that time that the question of the identification of the great multitude is settled. That there is to be a great multitude in God's organization was seen a long while ago; but the question of the identity of that great multitude and whence it comes was not understood, otherwise the question would not arise.

'But who are they, and whence came they?' For many years God's people have understood that there is a great multitude of spirit-begotten persons who are members of and in the denominational churches or religious systems, and who are prisoners to such systems and who must yet come out from these organizations and take their stand against the organization and on the Lord's side, and that such would entail great tribulation or suffering upon them. For many years the remnant have been looking for such people in the church systems and have tried to find them, and at this late date they have not seen them. Can it be said that those who are now in the church denominational systems (which systems are in accord with other parts of Satan's organization) are spirit-begotten, and do in fact love God, and that they merely remain there until Armageddon and then, by the circumstances forced upon them, take their position on God's side? Such does not seem consistent with our God's righteous law.

Is there any Scriptural evidence proving that the great multitude is in fact a spirit-begotten company? Since all "are called in one hope" (Ephesians 4:4) and from the called ones God has 'taken out a people

for his name', why should we conclude that he has a great multitude of spirit-begotten creatures that occupy places in his organization different from others and which are not called to the kingdom? John already knew that this great multitude had come out 'of every nation, tribe, people and tongue', and therefore his question "Whence came they?" must apply to something other than that fact. It must mean that those composing the great multitude have come out of some common experience, or that they are about to come out of some such experience, which experience it is for Jehovah to determine what it must be.

Prior to the coming of the Lord Jesus to the temple many of the followers of Christ Jesus, and particularly the "elective elder" company, thought themselves to be teachers and interpreters of prophecy, including the prophecy of The Revelation. It was not an unusual thing during the Elijah period of the church to see at conventions some "leading brother" with a group around him, while he was looking wise and expounding his "recently discovered interpretation" of some prophecy, particularly The Revelation. They had every man of any prominence in the church foretold by the prophetic utterances and were giving much praise and adulation to some of these.

Now note the contrast between the attitude of such and that of John, to whom The Revelation was given: "Sir [My lord (*R.V.*)], thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb." (Revelation 7:14) John here represented the remnant, and his attitude corresponds with the correct attitude of the remnant;

and this shows that the remnant admitted that they did not know the correct answer and that they are not interpreters of prophecy, nor are they teachers. The remnant recognize God and Christ Jesus as the Teachers, and to them they give the honor and the glory. (Isaiah 30:20) The words of The Revelation show that the elder knew the answer; therefore that means that when God's remnant reach the point of real eldership, that is to say, maturity in Christ (Ephesians 4:13), then the remnant would know the correct answer, having learned the answer from the Lord their Teacher. The Lord has his own due time to reveal his secrets, and it is hardly to be expected that his time to give understanding of this matter to the faithful would precede the coming of the Lord Jesus to the temple. He does not reveal his secrets to the rebellious ones, but only to those who are unselfishly devoted to him.—Proverbs 3:32; Psalm 25:14.

Jehovah has made the necessary arrangements within his organization to instruct his people, and all recognize that for some years *The Watchtower* has been the means of communicating information to God's people. That does not mean that those who prepare the manuscript for *The Watchtower* are inspired, but rather it means that the Lord through his angels sees to it that the information is given to his people in due time, and he brings to pass the events in fulfillment of his prophecy and then invites those devoted to him to see the same. God through Christ Jesus feeds his people upon the "food convenient" for them, and gives it to them at the proper time. (Proverbs 30:8) The angels of the Lord that accompany him at the temple judgment serve under his commandment, and

the proof heretofore submitted through the WATCH TOWER publications shows conclusively that thus the Lord deals with his faithful ones on earth. The fact that the words are used, "And he said to me," shows that Jehovah would by his visible channel give answer to the question which has long been mooted, and this he would do in his due time, and that the answer would be given to the remnant when they arrived at the point of true eldership. It is reasonable to expect, therefore, that after the cleansing of the sanctuary those who stand approved and in the temple would be instructed and then the proper meaning of the great multitude would be understood.

TRIBULATION

Is the "great tribulation", mentioned in verse fourteen, "sent in special mercy to effect in the great multitude proper penitence for sin, and a proper appreciation of the divine standard of truth, and righteousness," as has been understood by many? Is that tribulation, as has been heretofore stated, sent upon the great multitude "that the suffering of the great multitude might be greater than that experienced by the little flock"? The reasonable answer to that question is, No. There is no scripture that would warrant a different answer. Other translations render this text (verse 14) in this manner: "Which come out of the great tribulation." (*R.V.*) "These are those coming [present participle in the Greek] out of the great affliction." (*Diaglott*) "Out of the great tribulation." (*Rotherham*) The thought has been often expressed that the great multitude have been developed alongside the "little flock" all down through the years of

the Christian era, and hence these have often been called "the tribulation saints".

If the tribulation mentioned is the 'great tribulation, such as never was' (Matthew 24:21), and which comes at the end of the world, then the great multitude could not be a class developed throughout the years past. Not even the entire church of God suffers the same degree of tribulation. The Scriptures clearly indicate that it is the remnant that will see the greatest tribulation. Concerning the faithful followers of Christ Jesus, who make up the 144,000, it is written: that 'in the world these have tribulation'; they are 'delivered up to be afflicted'; 'through much tribulation shall we enter the kingdom'; 'we glory and are patient in tribulation'; 'they fill up that which is behind of the affliction of Christ'; 'they are made a gazing stock, both by reproaches and afflictions, and as companions in tribulation'; 'have tribulation ten days.' —John 16:33; Matthew 24:9; Acts 14:22; Romans 5:3; 12:12; Colossians 1:24; Hebrews 10:33; Revelation 1:9; 2:10.

Is such tribulation, taken as a whole or collectively, "the great tribulation" out of which the great multitude comes? The answer is, No. Those of the royal house, that is, the 144,000, have great tribulation, and such tribulation has extended over the entire Christian era so far as this is concerned; but the greatest of all tribulations mentioned in the Scriptures must come after the great multitude appears and must be that which is mentioned by Christ Jesus as "tribulation such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time". (Matthew 24:21) That tribulation period began with the "day of Jehovah", to wit, in 1914,

when the war started against Satan's organization in heaven (Revelation 12:7-10), and reaches the great climax at the time of the battle of Armageddon, the great day of God Almighty. In harmony with this, Revelation calls it "the great tribulation".—Revelation 7:14, *R.V.*

Clearly it follows that this tribulation does not come for the purpose of developing or completing the great multitude, but it is the tribulation that comes upon Satan's organization, both visible and invisible, and which will completely wreck that entire organization. (2 Thessalonians 1:6; Romans 2:5-9; Revelation 2:22) As we have observed, "the day of Jehovah" began in 1914, at the birth of the Kingdom. (Revelation 11:17, 18) Had that tribulation, then begun, continued to its finality without interruption, all flesh would have been destroyed. The tribulation was shortened by the Lord approximately when the World War ended, thus affording an opportunity for his witnesses under his commandment to go forth and bear testimony to his name and his kingdom as a witness to the world. It is during this period of giving testimony, that is, the 'preaching of this gospel of the kingdom', that the great multitude class come out. The tribulation is not for the benefit of the great multitude. Let that be settled once and for all, because the tribulation is upon Satan's organization.

To "come out of the great tribulation" (*R.V.*) not alone means to survive that trouble as 'flesh that shall be saved' (Matthew 24:22), but primarily means that the great multitude come out from Satan's organization and take their stand on the side of Jehovah during the period of time that elapses from stopping the

World War until the day of Armageddon, that is to say, during the time that the "days should be shortened", and during which time period this gospel of the kingdom is preached.

What is the purpose of shortening those days of tribulation? The Lord answers: "For the elect's sake those days shall be shortened." (Matthew 24:22) During that period of time the elect have a work to do as witnesses for Jehovah and under his commandment, and at least a part of that work is the marking of the great multitude in their foreheads, as commanded by Jehovah. (Ezekiel 9:4) That means that Jehovah's witnesses must proclaim the message of truth and thus give an intellectual understanding of the truth to those of the great multitude class, which class "flee into the mountains", taking their place and stand in the city of refuge. (Matthew 24:16; Numbers 35:6) This is "immediately after the tribulation of those days" (Matthew 24:29), that is to say, the first part of the tribulation, from 1914 to 1918. The great multitude will also survive Armageddon, because God's promise to those who seek meekness and righteousness is that they may be hid in that time. (Zephaniah 2:3) All these scriptures negative the thought that the tribulation is for the purpose of developing or perfecting this class of God's people. The great tribulation is the execution of Jehovah's judgments against Satan's organization, and is not for the purpose of developing anyone.

ROBES

God's people came out of Babylon with soiled garments, that is, wearing "filthy garments", because

they were contaminated with the doctrines and practices of the Babylonish system. (Zechariah 3:3) (See *Preparation,* page 56.) They held to and taught many selfish doctrines that dishonor the Lord, among which doctrines were that of "character development", namely, that one might bring himself to the point of being worthy to help Jehovah rule the world; another, the adulation or worship of men; and the practice of formalism, and things of that nature. When the Lord Jesus appeared at the temple for judgment, he there began a work of cleansing his people in order that the cleansed ones might "offer unto the Lord an offering in righteousness". (Malachi 3:3) At the temple trial the cleansing progressed and the Lord said of and concerning the temple company: "Now Joshua was clothed with filthy garments, and stood before the angel." (Zechariah 3:3) But this cleansing work refers exclusively to the temple company, and not at all to the great multitude.

Concerning the great multitude the record is, "They . . . have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb." (Revelation 7:14) "Robes" here appears in the plural number and could not refer to the "robe [singular number] of righteousness", which the Lord provides for the approved temple company, as stated at Isaiah 61:10. Nor is the reference to anything official, such as "the purple robe". (John 19:2, 5) Nor does it refer to the "white raiment" of Revelation 4:4, or to Revelation 19:13, 16. The "robes" of the great multitude clearly mean their own public profession by which they identify themselves as trusting in the blood of Christ Jesus as the redemptive price of mankind, and by their openly

taking a stand on the side of Jehovah. Robes were worn on festive occasions, such as the time when the prodigal son returned and was clothed with the "best robe". (Luke 15:22) Many honest persons have been led to believe that the "higher powers" are and were the visible rulers of this wicked world; but when God enlightened his people and made known to them that the "Higher Powers" are Jehovah and Christ Jesus, this information was passed on to other honest people of good will, and many others have since joyfully accepted and recognized and acknowledged Christ Jesus and Jehovah as the "higher powers". To them it has been a time of joy, and they have gladly confessed before men that they believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and that they are trusting implicitly in Jehovah and are on his side.

Their robes symbolically thus identify them as on the Lord's side, and they are rejoicing that such is their position. Many of these had previously claimed to be believers in the Lord, and had given their hearts to the Lord, but in ignorance they had held to the things of the world. With the coming of Christ Jesus as the world's Rightful Ruler, and this information being given to the people of good will, it enabled them to see that they were under Satan's organization and that there was a necessity for cleaning themselves up by getting out. And this they do by forsaking Satan's organization and identifying themselves with God's organization.

According to the language of Revelation the great multitude do their own washing; that is, by reason of the course of action they take they break away from the unclean organization of Satan and openly

show themselves on the side of Jehovah, and this they do by openly confessing their devotion to God. "With the mouth confession is made unto salvation." (Romans 10:10) Coming to a knowledge of the fact that Jehovah's name must be vindicated, and that that is the important question, they not only confess themselves on the side of Jehovah but give assistance to the temple company in bearing witness to the honor and name of Jehovah God, and thus they get up into the "chariot".

How do they make their robes "white in the blood of the Lamb"? The shed blood of Christ Jesus is the basis for the forgiveness of sins and the basis for God to forgive uncleanness. By believing that Christ Jesus' shed blood is the redemptive price of mankind, and by consecrating themselves to do the will of God, based upon such belief, and by serving, worshiping and obeying the Lord, and not men, these take their stand on the side of Jehovah and participate in his service, and that is the only course that would give them a white and clean appearance in the sight of God. No man can take his stand on the side of Jehovah without believing in the shed blood of Christ Jesus as the means of salvation.

Millions of church-goers claim to believe in Christ; but having been improperly taught that he is merely an example to follow, they do not understand about the blood of Christ and its efficacy. When the eyes of their understanding are opened, and they take their stand on the side of Jehovah as above stated, they clean themselves up. They previously desired to do right, but had not been properly taught the right way, and the false and faithless clergy have been respon-

sible for their being taught the wrong way, seeing that these deny that there is any virtue in the shed blood of Christ Jesus. When these honest ones come to fully appreciate that Christ Jesus is King, and "is in the midst of the throne" with Jehovah, they hail Christ Jesus as King and cry out by publicly testifying: "Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb." They leave no doubt as to where they stand. Their situation is also illustrated by the unwitting manslayer, who flees to the city of refuge. (Numbers 35:11) Those of the great multitude now flee to Jehovah and Christ, "the Mountains," and there find refuge in Jehovah's organization and there abide 'till the death of the high priest' (Matthew 24:16; Numbers 35:32-34); that is to say, they abide there until the end of the great antitypical day of atonement is finished.—Leviticus 16:6-34; Hebrews 9:24-28.

Now we see a company that exactly fits the description given in Revelation seven concerning the great multitude. During the past few years, and within the time when 'this gospel of the kingdom is preached as a witness', there have come forward great numbers (and they are still coming) who confess the Lord Jesus as their Savior and Jehovah as their God, whom they worship in spirit and in truth and joyfully serve. These are otherwise called "the Jonadabs". These are being baptized in symbol, thus testifying that they have consecrated themselves to do the will of God and have taken their stand on the side of Jehovah and serve him and his King; thus they have cleaned up and are now "arrayed in white robes". Thus the great multitude is definitely identified, not as a spirit-

begotten class whose hopes are for a place in heaven, but as a class trusting in the Lord, and who hope for everlasting life on the earth as a gift from Jehovah God through Christ Jesus our Lord.

These continue to 'seek meekness and righteousness' and have the promise of Jehovah that they may be hid during the greatest part of the tribulation, that is, at Armageddon. (Zephaniah 2:3) This is further proof that their development is not the result of the great tribulation but that they "come out of the great tribulation", that is to say, come out of the world within the period of the tribulation from the time of the coming of Christ Jesus until Armageddon. They must wash up before Armageddon comes. It would be too late to wash at the time of Armageddon. They 'flee to the Mountains', and this they do before the "winter" time, that is, the great climax of tribulation at Armageddon. (Matthew 24:16, 20) They have come out and still they come, and now together with the remnant they are singing, "Salvation to our God . . . and unto the Lamb." (Revelation 7:10) They honor Jehovah God and his King, and they refuse to give any glory to any part of Satan's organization. They are certainly not 'contaminated with the ideas and ways of this world'. They are against it.

Those honest-hearted ones who have left Satan's organization are now on the Lord's side, and they want that fact to be known and they make it known, and they worship the only true God, Jehovah, and his King. "Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple: and he that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them." —Revelation 7:15.

They look to the throne of God and Christ, and to no other place, and therefore they are "before the throne" and in the sight of Jehovah and his King. They vote for the kingdom of God, and they participate in the publication work of advertising the King and the kingdom. They have the recognition of the throne, and God turns his favorable attention to them to the end that they may be hid in the day of his anger. Jonadab being used as a type of the great multitude, God's promise to Jonadab now applies to the great multitude: "Therefore thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel, Jonadab the son of Rechab shall not want a man to stand before me for ever." —Jeremiah 35:19.

Revelation 7:15 really is the key to the identification of the great multitude. Heretofore the position was erroneously taken that the great multitude is a spirit-begotten class, the members of which have been negligent of their privileges and decline to participate in the service of the Lord, and yet look forward to or expect Jehovah to bless them by reason of their deathbed repentance. But this description in Revelation of the great multitude is that "they are before the throne of God, and publicly serve him" (*Diaglott*); "and are rendering divine service unto him." (*Rotherham*) Heretofore they have, like others in the world, ignorantly "worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator". (Romans 1:25) But now they see and understand and obey the words of Jesus, the Lamb of God, saying to them: "Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve"; which words apply to all creatures whom Jehovah approves.—Matthew 4:10.

To what extent do the great multitude serve Jehovah? The Revelation answers: "They . . . serve him day and night." Daytime and nighttime means all the time, and this description shows that the great multitude serve Jehovah all the time, regardless of hours. They are not satisfied to work eight hours a day and quit on the strike of the clock and refuse to do what some call "overtime", but are ready and respond to the call for service at any time day or night. Reports from the field in recent months fully corroborate this conclusion. Many of those who are now Jonadabs hear of the truth one day, give themselves wholly to the Lord, and immediately join in the field service and are rejoicing and are anxious to do whatsoever they can. Also, these are studying with diligence the Word of God, and thus they seek meekness and righteousness, striving to obey Jehovah's commandments.

Jehovah's temple is his capital organization and therefore is on Mount Zion. The great multitude "serve . . . day and night in his temple". They must come to Zion, God's organization, with Jehovah's witnesses, who are a part of the temple, and this is foretold by the words of the prophet Zechariah: "Thus saith the Lord of hosts, It shall yet come to pass, that there shall come people, and the inhabitants of many cities: and the inhabitants of one city shall go to another, saying, Let us go speedily to pray before the Lord, and to seek the Lord of hosts; I will go also. Yea, many people and strong nations shall come to seek the Lord of hosts in Jerusalem, and to pray before the Lord. Thus saith the Lord of hosts, In those days it shall come to pass, that ten men shall take

hold, out of all languages of the nations, even shall take hold of the skirt of him that is a Jew, saying, We will go with you; for we have heard that God is with you."—Zechariah 8:20-23; see *Preparation,* page 139.

The words uttered by Moses to Israel now apply with greater force to spiritual Israel, the remnant, to wit: "Ye shall not do after all the things that we do here this day, every man whatsoever is right in his own eyes. . . . Then there shall be a place which the Lord your God shall choose, to cause his name to dwell there; thither shall ye bring all that I command you; . . . Take heed to thyself that thou offer not thy burnt offerings in every place that thou seest; but in the place which the Lord shall choose in one of thy tribes, there thou shalt offer thy burnt offerings, and there thou shalt do all that I command thee."—Deuteronomy 12:8-14.

The same rule must be obeyed by the great multitude, because they have become a part of God's organization. They must come to Zion, God's temple, and worship there, and not at any worldly organization called "the church". Says Jehovah: "Mine house [the temple] shall be called an house of prayer for all people." (Isaiah 56:7; 1 Kings 8:41-43) The great multitude must follow after Jehovah's witnesses on the highway to Zion. (Isaiah 35:8-10; 62:10) They must keep in mind and give heed to the words of God's prophet, to wit: "But the LORD is in his holy temple: let all the earth keep silence before him." (Habakkuk 2:20) Jehovah's temple is not anywhere in Satan's organization, and therefore the great multitude must flee out of Babylon, which is Satan's or-

ganization, and must boldly take their stand on the side of the Lord and associate themselves with God's anointed people.

"In his temple," where the great multitude serve, does not mean the inner court, because such inner court is exclusively for Jehovah's priestly class. The great multitude are separated to the "outer court" and "lower pavement" of the temple, and they serve Jehovah day and night, that is, continuously. (Ezekiel 40:17, 18; 44:19; 46:3, 9, 10, 20-24) Manifestly this statement is made of their continuous service to show that they do not compromise with Satan's organization at any time and to completely negative the claim that they do compromise.

With Jehovah, and not with Satan, is the place of habitation of all who love and serve God. "And he [Jehovah] that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them." (Rev. 7:15) Christ now begins his rule even in the midst of his enemies. (Rev. 11:17; Ps. 110:2) By this rule all of Jehovah's organization dwell under his protection. He "will tabernacle over them" (*Diaglott*); "shall spread his tabernacle over them." (*R.V.*) Thus the Jonadabs or great multitude are hid in the day of God's wrath.—Revelation 21:3, *Diaglott.*

The Christ is that which stands in the tabernacle of God. Through Christ Jehovah dwells with and overshadows the great multitude for their protection and relief. Jehovah thus dwells with them representatively through Christ because they have fled there to the city of refuge. The Greater Jehu has invited them into the chariot, that is, into the organization of Jehovah, and he tabernacles over them. The great multitude have been marked in their foreheads by

Jehovah's 'man in linen, with the writer's inkhorn by his side', that is to say, by those who have brought to them the message of God's name and kingdom. (Ezekiel 9:3) God and his King are their hope and stay. "In the mountain of the height of Israel will I plant it [a tree of hope as a tabernacle]; and it shall bring forth boughs, and bear fruit, and be a goodly cedar: and under it shall dwell all fowl of every wing; in the shadow of the branches thereof shall they dwell."—Ezekiel 17:23.

There are millions of persons on earth who have hungered and do hunger for something better than the "husks" upon which they have been fed in the Babylonish systems called "churches". Since the coming of the Lord to the temple Jehovah's witnesses have been privileged to carry to these hungry ones God's message of truth, and those who have fed upon it have no occasion to ever hunger and thirst: "They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat."—Revelation 7:16.

In Satan's organization, or under it, more particularly speaking, the honest ones have hungered and thirsted both figuratively and literally. Satan's big "tree in the midst of the earth" (Daniel 4:10) furnishes them no shade. Those of Satan's world claim to be the sunlight of the world, and then they scorch and blister honest people; but now since the coming of the Lord Jesus to the temple, and the sounding of the fourth trumpet (Revelation 8:12) and the pouring out of the fourth vial (Revelation 16:8, 9), these have caused the self-styled "sun of the world" to suffer an eclipse, and now it is "not so hot" to those

of the sheep class under it, who have heard and read the message of God's name and his kingdom. These honest ones have turned themselves to God's organization, which is God's "woman", who is "clothed with the sun". (Revelation 12:1) No more does the self-styled "sun of the world" heat them up. This is exactly in accord with the word of the prophet Isaiah concerning the honest people of the world now seeking meekness and righteousness: "They shall not hunger nor thirst; neither shall the heat nor sun smite them: for he that hath mercy on them shall lead them, even by the springs of water shall he guide them. . . . Behold, these shall come from far; and, lo, these from the north and from the west; and these from the land of Sinim."—Isaiah 49: 10-12.

Christ Jesus at the temple as head of Jehovah's capital organization now leads and feeds those who honestly put themselves under his leadership. "Behold, I have given him for a witness to the people, a leader and commander to the people." (Isaiah 55:4) He is the real Sun, "the light of the world." (John 8:12) No more shall the great multitude, which stands before the throne, hunger and thirst: "For the Lamb, which is in the midst of the throne, shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters: and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes." (Revelation 7:17) Into the hand of the Lord Jesus all power is committed, and the Lamb of God shall be their Shepherd. He is the real Shepherd-King, of whom King David was merely a type. "And I will set up one shepherd over them, and he shall feed them, even my servant David; he shall feed them, and he shall be their shepherd. And I the LORD will be their

God, and my servant David a prince [in the midst of the throne] among them; I the LORD have spoken it."—Ezekiel 34:23, 24.

The great multitude or Jonadab company manifestly are those whom Jesus called his "other sheep". To the faithful disciples, the remnant, Jesus said: "I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine [the remnant]. . . . And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold [members of the royal house]: them also [the earthly sheep class] I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be [(*R.V.*) and they shall become] one fold [one flock], and one shepherd."—John 10:14-16.

All who come into and remain in Jehovah's organization must be of one harmonious flock, whether in heaven or in earth. The words of Jesus apply upon his coming to the temple in 1918 and thereafter, to wit: "And before him shall be gathered all nations; and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep [the sheep (*R.V.* and *Diaglott*)] from the goats: and he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left."—Matthew 25:32, 33.

He is The Christ, the Leader and Commander, and all creation that lives must acknowledge him, and every knee shall bow to him and every tongue confess that he is Christ the Lord, whether they are in heaven or in the earth, and all must thus acknowledge him to the glory of the Almighty God.—Philippians 2:9-11.

Whether any creature gets life in heaven or on earth, he must acknowledge and worship Jehovah as the only true and almighty God, and Christ Jesus as

his King and Chief Executive Officer, and every creature that receives life on earth or in heaven must be absolutely loyal and faithful unto God; which requirements are precedent to entering into life. It is entirely inconsistent and unscriptural to say that God will look with approval upon a qualified or limited faithfulness to him. To say that the great multitude are an indifferent class but that God is merciful to them because they have a little faith, and will ultimately save them in heaven, is wholly without Scriptural authority. The great multitude must be led by Christ Jesus and fed by him before Armageddon, and must be under his protection and be taken through Armageddon. And the Lamb of God "shall lead them unto living fountains of waters". (Revelation 7:17) Over the 'highway of holiness' Christ Jesus goes, and his flock of sheep, the anointed members of the royal house, follow him. (Isaiah 35:8-10) Then says the Lord: "I will make all my mountains [parts of God's organization] a way, and my highways shall be exalted."—Isaiah 49:11.

The "other sheep", that is, the great multitude, follow after and with Jehovah's witnesses and are led "unto fountains of waters of life". (*R.V.*) For this reason all who are thus led shall thirst no more. No longer do they go to the dried-up waterholes of the cruel devilish system, but by the grace of Jehovah and by the hand of the Lord Jesus Christ they are led to the fountains of living waters. (Jeremiah 2:13) The leading of the honest ones away from the brackish waters began when the Lord sounded the third trumpet and poured out the third plague or vial. (Revelation 8:10, 11; 16:4) Thus were dis-

closed the 'bitter waters of this world'. Then the Lord led, and still leads, those who love him unto the waters of life.

REJOICE

The great multitude are not "tribulation saints". They are not developed by tribulation. They are a company of joyful creatures who are active and zealous for Jehovah and his kingdom. Every honest seeker after God and righteousness has, before finding the Lord, been deeply grieved because of the wickedness seen among those who profess to be followers of Christ and who operate through church organizations in his name. These honest-hearted ones have shed tears because of the abominations they have observed committed in the name of the Lord. They have seen this in all the church denominational systems, particularly in the Roman Catholic Hierarchy crowd. But with the coming of the Lord Jesus to the temple, and the gathering of the faithful unto him, the faithful ones have shouted for joy. Many of these came out of the denominational systems and rejoiced greatly when they knew the Lord. These the Lord has sent forth with the message of good news and informed the honest people that his purpose is to destroy Satan's wicked and oppressive organization and to follow this up with a government of righteousness; and this message received into good and honest hearts has made many glad and caused them to rejoice. Those who have turned wholly to God and his kingdom have therefore ceased to weep.

"God shall wipe away every tear from their eyes." (Revelation 7:17, *R.V.*) Tears were shed because of

the reproaches brought upon the holy name of Jehovah, and which were brought there by the false persons who claimed to be servants of God. The honest ones shed tears because they could not understand why men who profess to serve God reproach his holy name at the same time. Upon receiving the message of truth and learning that Satan has ever reproached Jehovah's name and that all of his servants have, by fraud, deceit and false pretenses, brought reproach upon His holy name, and that soon Jehovah will vindicate his name by and through his kingdom under Christ, the tears of these honest ones have ceased to flow, and in the place thereof joy has filled their hearts, and their faces have been made to appear glad and they have fully turned to the Lord.

Even John the revelator "wept much" until he was informed that Christ Jesus had qualified as Jehovah's Vindicator, and that He is the One who discloses the purposes of Jehovah and executes his judgments. (Revelation 5:4) Every honest creature who sees and appreciates the purpose of Jehovah rejoices. In this way the honest seekers of the truth have received 'the mark in their foreheads', and they have intelligently fled to the Lord. (Ezekiel 9:4) They know that all good things and all blessings proceed from Jehovah, and thus he wipes away all their tears. The "holy city", which is God's organization, comes down from heaven, and now righteousness shall be established for ever, and then there shall be no more tears to those who remain in harmony with God. —Revelation 21:1-4.

Let Jehovah's anointed servant class, the remnant, now pause and consider for a moment what privileges

Jehovah has given to them since 1918. The tribulation upon Satan's organization began in 1914, when that wicked one and his angels were cast out of heaven. Satan, realizing his time was short, then became very angry and since has been bent upon the complete destruction of all flesh (Revelation 12:12), and he would accomplish this purpose except for the intervention of Jehovah God. "For the elect's sake," that they might be witnesses to the name of Jehovah, he stopped the World War. (Mark 13:20; Matthew 24:21, 22) Jehovah then removed the restraint that had been put upon his people during that war, that they might organize for and carry on his service. To the remnant the commandment was then given: "And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations: and then shall the end come."—Matthew 24:14.

That testimony must be delivered; and when it is delivered, there will follow the worst tribulation that shall ever come. It is within this period of time, and immediately preceding Armageddon, that Jehovah's witnesses have been privileged to go forth with the message of truth. Under the commandment of the Lord they have gone forth to "gather out the stones" and "lift up a standard for the [honest] people". (Isaiah 62:10) Jehovah's witnesses have gone forward to this work with songs of joy upon their lips because they know the King is upon his throne and the vindication of Jehovah's name is near. With their going the enemy has put forth his greatest endeavors to devour them, because they are delivering the testimony of Jesus Christ in obedience to God's commandment. (Revelation 12:17) No amount of persecution

has dampened the zeal of the faithful ones. They have observed the hand of the Lord dividing the people, and they have seen the "goats" assembling together under the commandment of Gog to carry out Satan's will, and they have observed the honest "sheep" class gathering themselves into a company under the leadership of the Lord. Now they behold that the "other sheep" class are all brought into the city of refuge before the greatest of all tribulations falls upon the world.

With this knowledge and privilege comes greater responsibility to those of Jehovah's witnesses to perform with increased zeal and earnestness their work of bearing testimony to the people of good will. Seeing and appreciating these things, they are determined that no amount of opposition or persecution shall deter them in the faithful performance of their assigned duty. Let the Roman Catholic Hierarchy and all others of Satan's wicked crowd do what they will. Soon that modern-Philistine organization will fall, and then the honest Catholics will increase the number of the "great multitude".

CHAPTER IX

JUDGMENT

JEHOVAH'S primary or chief purpose in sending his beloved Son Jesus to earth is to perform the duties of vindicating God's name. Incidental or subordinate thereto is the redemption and salvation of all human creatures that love righteousness and hate iniquity. His purpose Jehovah illustrated or pictured in dealing with the nation of Israel, his typical people. That he did by sending his representative Moses to Egypt to 'redeem a people to himself and make him a name'. (2 Samuel 7:23) In fulfillment of that prophetic picture Jehovah sent Jesus, the antitypical Moses, to earth (the antitypical Egypt) to perform his purpose. Jesus must first prove his own qualifications to carry out the purpose of Jehovah. To that end Jesus was put to the test for three and one-half years, and in everything Jesus proved his complete faithfulness unto God: "And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him." (Hebrews 5:9) Jehovah made Jesus the King of the world, the Redeemer of mankind, the great Executive Officer of Jehovah, and the Vindicator of His name. To Jesus Jehovah said: "Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows." (Hebrews 1:9; Psalm 45:7) Jehovah also made Jesus the Judge

to judicially determine all questions for decision that arise between Jehovah and his creatures.—John 5 : 22-27.

Jehovah is the true and almighty God. Satan the Devil is the mimic god, because Satan covets that which belongs to Jehovah and always resorts to wickedness to accomplish his purpose. The name of Jehovah God stands for everything that is good and righteous. The name of Satan stands for everything that is wicked. The question in dispute and which must be determined is: Can Satan induce all creatures to turn away from God and curse him, or will many of the human race when put to the test remain true and faithful to God? Can God put men on the earth who will be true to him? God's unchangeable law is that those who prefer to follow Satan, the mimic god, in his course of unrighteousness shall die, and those who prove true and faithful to Jehovah shall live for ever. Those who do prove faithful to God constitute "a people for himself". Necessarily the question at issue involves the word and name of Jehovah God, and to prove his supremacy Jehovah must vindicate his name. Christ Jesus is the great Vindicator, Judge and Executioner.

The temple of God is his capital organization, of which Christ Jesus is the Head, precious corner stone and foundation. (A detailed explanation concerning the temple is to be found in *Vindication,* Book Three, beginning at page 111.) When Jesus ascended into heaven after his resurrection he was then the Judge of all things and King of the world, but he was required to await God's due time for him to begin his rule and his judgment. The Scriptures and the facts show that Christ Jesus was enthroned in the year

1914 (A.D.) and sent forth to rule while the enemy Satan still exercises power. (Psalms 2:6; 110:1, 2) Thereafter, to wit, in 1918, the Scriptures and the facts show that Christ Jesus, the great Judge, came to the temple of God and from that time onward, and until the conclusion of Armageddon, he sits in judgment. At the temple Christ Jesus appears in the glory of his Father and in the glory which the Father has given him, Christ Jesus: "When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: and before him shall be gathered all nations; and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats." (Matthew 25:31, 32) This is a mental vision of his glorious court of judgment.

ORDER

The Scriptures show that the judgment of Christ Jesus at the temple proceeds in this order: The judgment begins with the "house of God", meaning those who are consecrated to do the will of God, begotten of the spirit, called to the high calling, and in line for a place in the kingdom. (1 Peter 4:17) At this judgment all selfish ones are adjudged adversely and 'gathered out of the kingdom and cast into outer darkness'. Such constitute the "evil servant" class, the end of which is destruction. All who are found faithful and true are gathered into the temple, that is, made a part of God's capital organization. These are anointed and made a part of the "faithful and wise servant" class, to whom Christ Jesus commits the interest of his kingdom on the earth by making them

INHERITING RICHES OF THE KINGDOM Page 345

[B L A N K]

the official witnesses of Jehovah and the representatives of Christ on earth.–Matthew 13:41-43; 24:45-51.

The anointed witnesses of Jehovah must go forth and 'preach this gospel of the kingdom for a witness' that the people of the nations may have an opportunity to choose whom they will serve; and when that witness work is done, then will follow Armageddon. (Matthew 24:14, 21) By causing "this gospel of the kingdom" to be told to the people Christ Jesus the great Judge thereby gathers before him the peoples of the nations, and the separating work begins. In this judgment persons of good will, and who are herein called Jonadabs, take their stand on the side or "right hand" of the Lord, and these the Lord calls his "sheep"; and all those who are against God and his kingdom show themselves to be on the side of the Devil, and Jesus puts them on his left hand, meaning the adverse side. Being brought in contact with the truth of God's kingdom, the people choose their own destiny, and therefore it is their personal responsibility. Upon Jehovah's witnesses is laid the responsibility of telling to the people the message of the kingdom, and upon those who hear rests the responsibility of determining which side they will take. (Ezekiel 3:18-21) Christ Jesus renders the final judgment upon each and every one, because God has committed to Christ all judgment.—John 5:22, 27.

Satan has heretofore been adjudged guilty of death. All who remain on his side will be destroyed. The Lord specifically mentions hypocrites and the "evil servant" among those that shall be destroyed. Such is the fate of all the wicked. (Psalm 145:20) The religious elements or organizations amongst the hu-

man race constitute the hypocrites, because such have claimed to serve God when in fact they have been serving the Devil. The Scriptures indicate that these will be destroyed first at Armageddon. Then follows the destruction of all other elements of Satan's organization. (Revelation 19:19-21) Satan is compelled to see all of his organization wiped out. Then the Lord Jesus, the great Executioner, dispatches Satan, and the earth is made clean. (Revelation 20:1-3; Hebrews 2:14) The destruction of Satan and his supporters constitutes a vindication of Jehovah's name because such proves that Satan is a liar and that Jehovah God is true and all-powerful.

From Abel to John the Baptist there were a few men who maintained their integrity toward Jehovah and received his approval. Those men died in faith but must remain dead and await the completion of the royal house before they are awakened out of death. Then they shall be brought to life and made perfect and will serve in the high offices of the kingdom on earth as the representatives of Christ Jesus. (Hebrews 11:1-40; Psalm 45:16) Those faithful men will also be a vindication of Jehovah's name. Jesus, the perfect man, by his faithfulness and complete obedience to God even unto the ignominious death, is the great vindication of God's word and name and for that reason is made the Vindicator or chief amongst God's officers. The faithful members of his organization who become part of the royal house in heaven are also a vindication of Jehovah's name. All persons of good will called the Jonadabs or "great multitude", proving their faithfulness unto Jehovah and his King, shall also constitute a vindication of Jehovah's name. Then

follows the resurrection of the dead and the judgment of all such during the reign of Christ. (John 5: 27-29) All mankind proving faithful and true during that judgment will be a testimony to the supremacy of Jehovah and to the honor of his name. All faithful men enter into the riches Jehovah has provided for them. The earth will be their everlasting home, yielding abundance and bringing constant peace, prosperity and happiness to all.—Psalm 67: 6, 7.

During the present time "the goats" are showing their opposition to God and his kingdom by persecuting Jehovah's witnesses. Chief amongst these persecutors are the religionists, the clergy of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy and other religious leaders. Those persecutors cause the arrest and imprisonment of Jehovah's witnesses to prevent them from carrying the message of the kingdom to the people, and therefore they are specifically acting as the instruments of the Devil. Concerning those opposers likened unto goats by the Lord he says: "Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire [symbolic of destruction that lasts for ever], prepared for the devil and his angels." Those of good will toward God and his kingdom show it by rendering aid, comfort and support to Jehovah's witnesses and by earnestly engaging with them in telling to others the truth about the kingdom. Christ Jesus, the great Judge, pronounces judgment upon such and uses these words: "Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world." (Matthew 25: 34) All such are granted life everlasting on the earth.

This knowledge coming to the people, each one must choose what course he will take. Which side are you taking, that of the Devil, or that of Christ the King of Jehovah and his kingdom? The obligation is laid upon you to choose whom you will serve.

CHAPTER X

DUTY AND RESULTS

JEHOVAH is just toward all creation. 'Justice is the foundation of his throne.' (Psalm 89:14; Revelation 15:3) "God is no respecter of persons" and shows no partiality. (Acts 10:34) He has permitted Satan to remain and put forth his best endeavors to prove his boastful challenge. God causes his witnesses to proclaim his message of truth as a testimony, and then he exhibits his supreme power. (Exodus 9:16, *Leeser*) Just preceding Armageddon God causes wide witness of the truth to be given that the people may have opportunity to choose whom they will serve. Those who have died in ignorance of the truth God in due time will raise out of death and cause them to know the truth, that they may choose their own destiny. The Lord has favored you by bringing you in contact with his truth. What is your duty? The Lord puts the words in your mouth by telling you what you may do, to wit: "Before the decree bring forth, before the day pass as the chaff, before the fierce anger of the LORD come upon you, before the day of the LORD'S anger come upon you. Seek ye the LORD, all ye meek of the earth, which have wrought his judgment; seek righteousness, seek meekness: it may be ye shall be hid in the day of the LORD'S anger."—Zephaniah 2:2, 3.

"Meekness," as used in this text, means that one is teachable, that he gladly hears the truth and diligently

attempts to get an understanding of the truth and then studies the Scriptures that he may know the will of God more fully. He lays hold upon all of the published helps, which the Lord has provided, that he may gain more knowledge. In that way he is seeking meekness in obedience to the Lord's instruction. The mere fact that you have heard the truth of God's Word and that you have taken your stand on the side of God and his kingdom will not be sufficient. You must steadfastly remain on the side of the Lord, and in order to do that you must continue to grow in knowledge and understanding of his purpose, as set forth in his Word.

A mere knowledge or mental conception of God's Word is not all, that is, sufficient. You must "seek righteousness", and that means to do right; and in order to do right you must keep God's commandments. It is written: "What doth the Lord require of thee, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly [obediently] with thy God?" (Micah 6:8) The first great commandment is to love God. One proves his love for God by keeping his commandments. You must know what are his commandments in order to prove your love for him. Whatsoever Jehovah or Christ Jesus commands, that you must do, and do it gladly. The second great commandment is that you must love your neighbor or fellow-man who is of good will. (Matthew 22:39) Having learned of Jehovah and his purpose, you must now tell your neighbor God's message, that he may find the way of riches that will result to those who will serve Jehovah and his kingdom. Note carefully some of the commandments the Lord has given, which commandments you must now obey.

"LET HIM THAT HEARETH SAY, COME" Page 355

[B L A N K]

FLEE

Many persons will read these lines who have been a long while in darkness by reason of the fact that Satan has caused them to be imprisoned or restrained by his agents who fraudulently operate under the name of Christ. To his faithful disciples Jesus said: "Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God." (Mark 4:11) That mystery is The Christ, Jesus being the Chief Corner Stone and Foundation Stone, the one Jesus mentioned when he said: 'On this Rock [Stone] will I build my church.' The members of his royal house are 144,000 others, illustrated as living stones, and these are called "the church". (Colossians 1:26, 27; 1 Peter 2:2-9) Satan created and brought forward "the mystery of iniquity" or lawlessness, which opposes God and his kingdom. (2 Thessalonians 2:4-8) Satan substitutes the mystery of iniquity for the kingdom of God. The Roman Catholic Hierarchy claims to be the official representative of God on earth and therefore the chief part of what is called "Christendom". The nations of "Christendom" have formed a league amongst themselves, and this League of Nations the religious element hails as "the political expression of God's kingdom on earth". Otherwise stated, the nations of "Christendom" by binding themselves together in a league, and the Roman Catholic Hierarchy assuming to be the foundation or main part of the religious organizations and a part of the political powers of the world, these together constitute that which stands in opposition to God and his kingdom. The nations in the League, including religious, political and commercial elements, set the same up in the place and

stead of God's kingdom, and the religious elements attempt to sanctify and make the whole thing holy and to stand in the place and stead of God's kingdom, therefore "in the holy place". Concerning that ungodly thing the religious elements say, "The League of Nations is the only light of the world"; whereas Jesus said: "I am the light of the world."—John 9:5.

ABOMINATION

"The way of the wicked is an abomination unto the Lord." (Proverbs 15:9) Satan is the chief wicked one, and that which is put forward by Satan and his organization as a substitute for God's kingdom constitutes an abomination unto God. Satan and his agents have caused the League of Nations to be put forward in the place and stead of the kingdom, and therefore says Jesus, and the prophet Daniel (11:31; 12:11), that such abomination that makes desolate stands in the holy place, where it ought not to stand. To all persons of good will the Lord Jesus now sounds the warning, which warning must be repeated to the peoples of earth, to wit: "When ye, therefore, shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:) then let them which be in Judæa flee into the mountains. For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be."—Matthew 24:15, 16, 21.

What are the mountains here mentioned? The answer is, the organization of Jehovah God under Christ Jesus, God being the GREAT ROCK or "Mountain", and Christ Jesus the capital organization also being

"a great mountain". The commandment of the Lord, therefore, is to those of good will that they must flee to the kingdom of God under Christ, "the mountains," for the reason that the kingdom is the only hope of the human race. It is God's provision of safety for those who will be saved. No one can remain in the Devil's organization and escape the plagues that will come upon all creation at Armageddon. You flee to the mountains by getting into the "chariot" of the Greater Jehu, that is to say, joining yourself to the organization of the Lord under Christ Jesus.

When you have fled to the mountains, that is to say, to God's kingdom under Christ, you must there continue to obey the commandments of the Lord if you would be hid and shielded during the final cataclysm that shall befall creation during Armageddon, and for that reason the Lord tells you to "seek righteousness, [and] seek meekness: it may be ye shall be hid in the day of the Lord's anger". If you fail to obey this commandment, you are certain not to be hid or shielded during Armageddon. There is no promise that anyone will survive the battle of the great day of God Almighty except those who are in the organization of Jehovah under Christ, and who remain faithful and true to the Lord. Some here will ask, How may I know what are the commandments concerning me, which the Lord has given, and which I must keep? The Word of God contains the information concerning his purpose toward his creatures. The coming of the Lord Jesus to the temple of God in 1918 fixes the time when God is pleased to make known his purposes to those who diligently seek him and serve him. The Lord has graciously provided for

the publication of his message in the form of books, that the people may be informed of the truth. On the last pages of this book you will find a list of such publications, which will enable you to locate in the Bible the very texts about which you desire to know, and which answer your questions. Provide yourself with those publications, study the same, together with your Bible. Those books do not contain the opinion of any man. They merely enable you to locate the words of the Lord and to find out the very things you desire to know; and doing this, you are obeying God's commandments.

"SAY, COME"

One of the commandments of the Lord that specifically applies at the present time is this: "This gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations: and then shall the end come." (Matthew 24:14) In fulfillment of this commandment faithful men and women who are privileged to be Jehovah's witnesses go from place to place and present to the people the publications setting forth the message of the kingdom. When you have taken your stand on the side of God's organization, when you have fled to the kingdom of God under Christ, then it becomes your privilege and duty to transmit that information received to others who may desire to hear. You must therefore join with Jehovah's witnesses in 'preaching this gospel of the kingdom'.

Christ Jesus is the great Spirit and the Head of God's capital organization, and those who are associated with him as members of his royal house are designated "the bride". All of these must be at com-

plete unity and are at unity and doing the same work to the glory of Jehovah. Therefore it is written: "And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come; and whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely." (Revelation 22:17) It is the people of good will, the Jonadabs, those who have fled to the city of refuge, the Lord's "other sheep", that hear the message of the kingdom of God. To such persons, when hearing, the Lord, "that Spirit," gives this commandment: "Let him that heareth say, Come." This is a specific command to the Jonadab class to take up the message of the kingdom and carry it on to others. The purpose of their so doing is to prove their love for God and his kingdom, and this they do in order that "whosoever will" may come and "take the water of life freely". Jehovah, the great Fountain of unfathomable riches, is now opening to all who desire to have life everlasting the means of understanding. If you love God, you will obey his commandment by continuing faithfully to proclaim to others the good news that the kingdom is at hand and that it is the only hope for humankind. If you love your neighbor you will joyfully make known to such the message of truth, that he too may receive the blessings of God and become rich.

ACCOMPLISHED

The purpose of Jehovah is certain to be fully accomplished. The Lord Jehovah says: "I have purposed it, I will also do it." "My word . . . shall accomplish that which I please." (Isaiah 46:11; 55:11) Everyone who has faith in God knows that God will

bring about exactly what he has promised and that nothing can prevent it. Why, then, should anyone consider for a moment the idle theories of imperfect men? Only the fool will follow men, and by so doing he says in his heart: "There is no God." "Every prudent man dealeth with knowledge: but a fool layeth open his folly. Poverty and shame shall be to him that refuseth instruction: but he that regardeth reproof shall be honoured." (Proverbs 13:16, 18) If you have been following the doctrines of men, the Lord will now reprove you by bringing to your attention the truth; and then if you obey the truth, you may enter into the very great riches which he has prepared for those who love and serve him.

God's will and purpose is expressed in his Word, and upon that expressed purpose creatures can always confidently rely. For this reason Jesus instructed his followers to always pray to God: 'Thy will be done in heaven and in earth.' That prayer does not affect the outworking of God's purpose, but it does keep the creature's mind in the right condition by always keeping his affections set upon God and his kingdom.

When covetousness led to the crime of rebellion against God and to the death of humankind Jehovah there expressed his purpose to bring forth a "seed" that would regenerate with life all those who under the test prove their integrity toward him. The promised seed is The Christ, and according to his purpose God has fulfilled that promise. Each one of the royal house proves his integrity toward God and then enters into the riches of immortality and is for ever with the Lord Christ Jesus. (Revelation 20:4) To

such it is written: "The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints, and what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power."–Ephesians 1:18, 19.

Before the coming of the Lord Jesus to earth a few men resisted the Devil, maintained their integrity toward God, and died in faith and faithful. The names of many of these men appear at the eleventh chapter of Hebrews. Soon those faithful men shall be awakened out of death, made perfect men, and be the "princes" or visible representatives of the kingdom on the earth. (Psalm 45:16; Isaiah 32:1) They will inherit riches, and their riches and honor shall endure everlastingly, because such is the purpose of Jehovah.

God declares that he made man for the earth and the earth for obedient man. (Isaiah 45:12, 18) The earth is certain to be the everlasting home of those now living on earth and who prove their integrity toward God. Those living are first judged, and then those who have died in ignorance shall be awakened and given an opportunity to prove their integrity toward God. The faithful ones shall live everlastingly and enjoy all the riches of the earth, because God has so promised.—John 8:51; 11:26.

Men everywhere continue to charge God with responsibility for permitting all wickedness in the world, and in this they do wrong, because they are ignorant of God's purpose. Many say, Why should God let me suffer so much? To such these words are addressed: "Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against

God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus? What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction: and that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory?"–Romans 9:20, 22, 23.

God will give all men an opportunity to choose the side of the Devil and die or choose the side of the Lord, be faithful to God, and live. Which is your choice?

Study to show yourself approved unto God, know Jehovah and Christ Jesus, because such is the way to life everlasting. (2 Timothy 2:15) The gates of God's kingdom are swinging open and already his exceeding great riches begin to appear to the vision of men. The kingdom is here and soon will destroy all that oppose it. Those who rely upon Jehovah's promises know this to be true. The apostle was one of the faithful, and under inspiration from the Lord he wrote concerning God's purpose to destroy all wickedness of the world. The day for the destruction of the wicked organization under Satan is now at hand. Therefore this faithful follower of Christ Jesus wrote: "Eagerly looking forward to the coming of the day of God, by reason of which the heavens, all ablaze, will be destroyed, and the elements will melt in the fierce heat? But in accordance with his promise we are expecting new heavens and a new earth, in which righteousness will dwell."–2 Peter 3:12, 13, *Weymouth.*

The "new heavens" is composed of Christ Jesus and the members of his royal house. The "new earth" will be composed of the faithful men on earth who

represent God, some of which men are named in Hebrews the eleventh chapter, and these will perform service as the visible rulers. That will not be "restitution" of old things. It will be the making of all things new, as it is written: "And I heard a loud voice, which came from the throne, say, 'God's dwelling place is among men, and He will dwell among them, and they shall be His peoples. Yes, God Himself will be among them. He will wipe every tear from their eyes. Death shall be no more; nor sorrow, nor wail of woe, nor pain; for the first things have passed away.' Then He who was seated on the throne said, 'I am re-creating all things.' And He added, 'Write down these words, for they are trustworthy and true.' "—Revelation 21:3-5, *Weymouth.*

The accomplishment of these things, according to his purpose, will be a complete vindication of the name and word of Jehovah God. All creation will know that Jehovah is the source and fountain of all riches and glory, and that all creatures who obey him will live and receive his blessings of riches, which he gives freely, and to such he adds no sorrow. (Proverbs 10:22) All the obedient ones will enjoy the riches of Jehovah for ever and will continue in everlasting peace and happiness. Then everything that breathes will for ever honor and praise the Most High, whose name alone is

J E H O V A H .

—Psalm 150.